

Contract Marriage With My Ex

Author not credited

STORYPDF

Complete English text · A4 reading edition

Contents

Chapter Prologue...	6
Chapter 1...	8
Chapter 2...	10
Chapter 3...	12
Chapter 4...	15
Chapter 5...	18
Chapter 6...	21
Chapter 7...	24
Chapter 8...	27
Chapter 9...	30
Chapter 10...	33
Chapter 11..	36
Chapter 12...	39
Chapter 13...	42
Chapter 14...	46
Chapter 15...	49
Chapter 16...	52
Chapter 17	56
Chapter 18. I wanna go...	60
Chapter 19. Revelation...	63
Chapter 20. His daughter...	66
Chapter 21. As much as he needs me, I need him...	70
Chapter 22. His strength...	73

Chapter 23. Billy's back home...	76
Chapter 24. His mother...	79
Chapter 25. Scared...	82
Chapter 26. Just Mine...	85
Chapter 27. I want you to love me...	88
Chapter 28. Blissfully amazing...	91
Chapter 29. Will it be like this...	94
Chapter 30. What's wrong...	97
Chapter 31. Where is Kiara?	100
Chapter 32. Kidnapped	103
Chapter 33. I'll win you back	106
Chapter 34. Destroyed	109
Chapter 35. Alone	112
Chapter 36. Did I take too harsh decision in the name of revenge	115
Chapter 37. New feelings	119
Chapter 38. Too good to be real.	122
Chapter 39. Date	124
Chapter 40. Confused mind	127
Chapter 41. His agonies.	130
Chapter 42. Worried for him.	133
Chapter 43. Shocked	136
Chapter 44	139
Chapter 45 Tears of regret	142
Chapter 46. No you weren't wrong	145
Chapter 47	148

Chapter 48. I hope you are fine, raven	151
Chapter 49. She killed the human in him	154
Chapter 50. I know what you want to talk about!	157
Chapter 51. The party	160
Chapter 52. I need him	164
Chapter 53. So this was Girard's secret	168
Chapter 54. Back to mommy Kiara	171
Chapter 55. You don't see my pain	175
Chapter 56. How can I not believe that nothing happened!	178
Chapter 57. When I talk to you— look at me	182
Chapter 58. He's turned you into a sex addict	186
Chapter 59. Their love won!	189
Chapter 60. Unexpected crash	192
Chapter 61. Unveiling secrets and a broken Warrior	195
Chapter 62. New beginning	199

About this edition

This StoryPDF reading edition contains the complete English text, with its original paragraph and section order preserved.

Newly typeset with selectable text, a linked contents section and chapter bookmarks. Copyright rules can differ by country. Corrections and rights enquiries: liuxinglianxue@gmail.com.

Read online: [StoryPDF / Contract Marriage With My Ex](#).

Reading edition: 2026-10-28. Typography: Crimson Text (SIL Open Font License).

Chapter Prologue...

Amsterdam, Late night, Getting down of his Audi R8, he straightened his casual wears. His eyes intriguingly looking at the tower in his front, he adjusted his glares. After pocketing his iPhone he moved inside of the tower slowly.

The night was slow and silent. Yet the moon in the sky shone bright. One could clearly see the spots it has amidst the dancing black clouds. He pressed the button of '9th floor' and stood silently against the mirror behind him looking at the small screen above the elevator doors that screened the number of floors he crossed by.

The doors unlatched with a ding, he bit his lower lip exiting the same. His emotionless peepers gazed the door of the flat located in the corner, 'Flat no. 903' with a sigh. After a moment of blank thinking, he finally pressed the bell button. Almost after five minutes, he sensed the lock from within getting unlocked and there, she stepped out.

"Uhh, you! You here at this time, anything serious..." She pulled her loose hairs in a bun with a sleepy yawn while at the same time pulling close the loose jacket she wore close to her chest. She couldn't stand his dark eyes checking her petite body when she was only wearing a loose knee length night dress with no brasserie.

"Umm yeah, I... I mean no. It is not serious..." He diverted his pupils from her body, he can't let his mind to lose his patience now or else, they'd end up in her bed for good time!!! Never mind, he could not find words to speak the reason why was he standing at her door step at this hour of night. So, simply removing some papers from his jacket he forwarded them to her.

Her eyes grew wider looking at the paper type, and she shockingly blurted out, "We didn't plan on getting married for real. It was supposed to be a fake marriage, wasn't it?"

It made him sigh whilst rolling his eyes lazily, he unfolded the papers and showed her the title that read, 'Marriage contract' "Yes we don't marry for real. This is just a simple contract between you and I agreeing on the terms that we stay together in my house during the time of the contract and of course, stay like a married couple..." She nodded her head in understanding yet a part of her heart skipped when he called THEM a married couple.

They stood silently while she went through the clauses of the contract, "So I'll take you leave. Just give me a call after you done signing them..." He sucked in a breath with a tired smile, she nodded in yes with a blink of her eyes and the very next moment, he was walking back to the elevator.

Once he was inside and the doors were just going to get closed her heart melted looking at his features, "He's going to break you!"

... Her heart warned.

She replied back....

“But I’m going to love him anyway.”

Tbc...

Chapter 1...

Meet Kiara

There was the pen held in between her index finger and thumb, she laid on her tummy and legs bent from the knees and raised up in the air, hairs still in a bun and the jacket she wore earlier was removed and now rested on the couch nearby, her eyes incredulously, with a jumping heart stared at the papers. She smiled sheepishly like an idiot reading the first few lines again and again that read, 'Kiara Diaz an independent woman, living in so and so place agrees to marry Raven Carter for the span of one year.

If needed the period of contract shall be renewed further after the date expires and if it requires.'

She rolled over on her back and raised the papers up in the air and smiled yet again reminiscing the moments when she met him in life. The encounters were small but special, hurting but hot, lively but painful. She closed her eyes pulling the papers close to her chest and breathed deeply and listened to the rhythm of her breath.

They were slow and calm, 'I love your heartbeats, and they soothe my heart.' That was the very first of the compliments she received from him. It was his voice, his every move and obviously that beautiful smile on his supple pinkish lips that made her go crazy.

Kiara Diaz who never paid attention towards any guy's proposal earlier said YES to him instantly. She was innocent and appealing, may be that was why every guy wanted her? But what she wanted He didn't understand.

"Shit Kiara what are you thinking. Sign the papers and go to sleep. You have a big day tomorrow. The biggest day!" ... She said to herself sternly and laid down on her pillow properly whilst turning the lights off yet, there was one name that kept on playing in her mind, Raven.

The harsh wind coming from the AC hit her delicate frame shaking her from her sleep. Kiara got up sluggishly; her hands shivered while reaching for the remote of the gadget and turned it off. The next thing she did is, sneak into the blanket by keeping her legs in the place of pillow and head in the place of keeping her legs. Her eyes were too tired that she didn't even know when she fell back asleep!

Not even fifteen minutes would have passed that her phone rang. She cried in annoyance and slapped the mattress, "Shut the fuck up mother fucker!!!! Let me sleep." ... She whimpered balling her fists. Her eyes shut even tighter when the ringing increased aching her ears.

Kiara got up from the mattress on her knees with the sheet hanging across her shoulders and raised the phone that was under the pillow after pulling it out, she was just going to throw it down on the floor until, "Raven Calling" caught her eye sight.

Her eyes quickly moved into the direction of the clock, "Shit!!!! 10.00 am."... She covered her mouth making crying faces. "I'm late! I was supposed to be there by 7.30."... Her grip around the phone loosened and it fell on the bed and... The rings turned off.

Why on earth does this happen whenever he calls!

Why she has to sleep till so late when it's the important day in his life?

Why annoying him like the earlier times?

She quickly hopped down the bed, picking up the clothes she has removed the other night for the morning and rushed inside of the bathroom. She turned on the tap and at the same time took her night wear off letting the warm water wet her perfect body.

She has kept everything ready beforehand, like removing the most decent dress, His favourite perfume, the favorite bracelet he gifted her and what not one night before so that she could reach the spot on time. It was her MARRIAGE with her EX-BOYFRIEND. But like always, she was late.

Tbc..

Chapter 2...

Meet Raven Carter.

He glared her with murderous looks as she came out of the car. "Sorry, I... Just ended up sleeping more."... She gave an apologetic look with a small smile, her hands carried her simple blue gown. She was looking extremely beautiful, her black hairs were open and curled from the tips, brown big eyes with big lashes from time to time looking at his face while her thin yet plump lips curling and twisting in fear, the off shoulder gown fitted her in perfect place while the medium sized heels made her look taller that she came up till the height of his lips. He did not utter a word watching her walk silently towards him with a lowered head, this is not new for him. He has three years experience with her late coming habit. And every time after coming late, she would give him her cute smile that would melt his heart.

However today, even though the blood was rushing in his veins with speed, he did not say a word to her. She was three hours late, they were supposed to sign the marriage (contract) papers in the early morning and shift in his bungalow with him. The luggage of hers and other belonging was agreed to be shifted in the afternoon. Raven Carter, he first of all never knew he will come up with the idea of marrying her who he broke up with two years ago and move in with her. The way she pressed her lips was very well knowing how he was trying to suppress his aggression unlike the time when they were together she played with her bracelet.

She felt heck uncomfortable sensing his intense gaze focusing her face with dark pupils that had always shuddered her. "We will definitely have a conversation about this late coming habit of yours. Now let's go in."... She upped her eyes in stupefying manner, did she hear him correctly! Did he just let her go that easily? Why didn't he leave her behind and go like previous times?

Yeah that's what he would do every time she was late!

Kiara silently followed him with small steps. Even the way he marched ahead of her, she could tell that his anger was on the highest level. It was just that he was not letting it out because they were no more like past. He was changed. She was changed. They were changed. And obviously, the time has changed too.

Any ways, after taking the elevator and staying inside with him for a little while Kiara with him came out of it, she was zoned out that she didn't even realize which floor they were on. She absent mindedly followed him wherever he walked, "We are on the twenty ninth floor, going towards the advocates' cabin who has our contract papers. It's because of you that I'm late again."... She did not utter a word and continued to follow him.

After taking a left turn they came to a four ways path, where they took three left turns again then a right, then left, then walked ahead for more than a minute. Kiara was grateful that he was there, if not, then she would have ended up getting lost. The puzzling turns and left right

interval turns, her head has already begun to go round and round. "We are here."... Her eyes lit up listening to that. Finally, they halted at a closed door with a brown colored nameplate hanging on it, she felt like puking on it. The person who was other side, she was damn sure has no taste at all. "I expect you to behave well in front of the advocate and the witnesses please. Don't just show who you are to them, I don't want to look like a fool because of you."... Her peepers automatically gazed down on the wooden floor shining brown under the lights feeling insulted. He was rude and obviously, his way of expressing himself with that 'Uhh you are more like an embarrassment to me' look, he threw a gaze that was not at all understandable.

Then also she nodded her head lightly and firmly to receive a nod from him. "Okay, present yourself as my wife. I have told them already you are my ex-girlfriend. Please act wisely, and don't act like your usual self— in a childish way or like a stupid teenage. So, shall we go in"... Once again he indirectly insulted her, the tears halted on the edge of her lashes threatening to slip down on her cheeks, but she controlled them anyway.

She's always been sensitive, his words always affected her. Yeah! It was for her own good but still meeting him after years and then hearing him speak such things she felt awful. And unfortunately, he sensed that. She was that open book which he has read thousands of times and knew how to bring her back to life. Sighing tiringly, he pulled her close by sliding his hand down her waist. She quickly looked over at his face and in his eyes. "I... I am sorry. I shouldn't have said that. But you know this annoys me. I am sorry."... She closed her eyes feeling him close to her lips.

He snuggled near her left ear giving her thrills. "Come on let's now go in."... He put some hair strands behind her ear those were trying to cover her face. Once he was done, he moved further for the knob and twist it, he gave her an assuring smile. And no sooner did the door open wide enough to look inside, Kiara took few steps back not believing over her eyes at all at what they just saw while Raven attempted to pull her close examining her condition.

Shit.... he knew she will freak out, yet not like this!!!

Tbc...

Chapter 3...

Her fear, Girard Carter

She tried her best to get out of Raven's hold. There was sweat running down her forehead speaking of her anxiety. Kiara banged her fist on his hard chest giving him hard time in controlling her. "Ehhh... Kiara, calm down, he will not hurt you. He is changed now."... He spoke assuring near her ear rubbing her back.

There was no way to calm her nerves down. "I want to go, let me go Raven."... She said sternly yet difficultly between her heavy breaths. The dark pair of black eyes that was staring her keenly with a chaste smile was intrigued and reading her behavior. She's not changed at all. Three years but still the behavior, nervousness, fears... everything was just the same as it was in the old times.

"I don't trust him, nor do you. Now let me go."... She glared him, just being on the verge of crying. The advocate who was supposed to get their contract papers signed and get Raven through with this procedure, sat curiously in his seat looking at the businessman trying to handle his going to be wife, alas it seemed the toughest job for him as for now.

He was though in his mid forties, with wrinkled round shaped face, bald thin man with black eyes. His lips were thick and of pale color. The black suit seemed as though a dress hanging on a skeleton however one could clearly see the professionalism his face entertained.

Raven's one arm was locked around her waist and the free one he utilized to keep her still and protecting him from her back to back punches. "Kiara!"... A loud growl with high tone shout stunned her, she froze in her posture with her growing pupils fixing on his face that was red. The time supposedly was stopped, there ran a wave of silence— awkward silence that made both Girard and the advocate to pass glances awkwardly.

"Enough of your childishness" He shouted near her lips that turned her mute and eventually her eyes traveled down on her fingers those were shaking in fear. In fact the saline tear drops she had tried to hold back came sliding down her cheek turning her beautiful face sallow.

Raven sighed looking with 'What should I do with you!' look at his brother, Girard... the reason behind this outburst of their unusual condition. In turn Girard shrugged his shoulder biting his tongue. He had been the biggest fear of her life, her bully who would bother her every fucking second in the college.

And the worst part was, he was none other than Raven's elder brother aka their senior in Don Bosco University. She had wished for the college to end soonest where the others were asking it not to, just because she was being badly bullied by him.

And intriguingly, it would happen in Raven's absence. And when she would tell him about the happenings, he would just shove it away with a bored look for it was nothing new to listen. Half of his college life or say dating life went in listening to her complaints where she would badmouth about his elder brother, ask to thrash him, take stupid promises to not let themselves stay in the house as same as of his after they get married.

And today, seemed the worse day she has once thought back in her college times about her and his future regarding their marriage life was coming true. "I didn't do anything. You know she's got a bad habit of accusing me." Girard unwrap the chewing gum that he took off from his jeans pocket and stuffed it inside of his mouth by suspending it high in air and quickly taking it between his lips before it could fall down. "What else can I expect you to say" Raven said silently that still reached his brother who laughed at his words whilst chewing his gum.

Girard Carter, seven years elder to Raven, charming, handsome with heck of sex appeal is a playboy yet having infinite affairs with infinite women all at the same time. His eyes were the scariest green that he inherited from their father. Girard made bubble off his chewing gum enjoying that.

It made him feel as though they were in the college premises where she was hiding herself in her boyfriend's arms with moist eyes and puffy Pikachu kinda cheeks turning red like a kid while he was standing in front of her bully to inquire why did he do that to her? To which he would chip his same old statement, "I didn't do anything. You know she's got a bad habit of accusing me." And like every time he would end up shouting on her for either his brother would clearly fool him or she would speak something out of anger that would make Girard come near her to show her the new side of the hell. And as always to handle the situation, Raven would scream on her.

However, the situation here was different. This time indeed he was innocent, and she was indirectly accusing him by crying hysterically like how she would cry after meeting up with her painful pranks and bullies. But here, just the difference was she was weeping because of the bitter memories and not him, who was enjoying seeing her like that. His favorite prey.

Okay, Raven gave his brother a conquered look. He closed his eyes before picking her up in his arms and taking her to the left corridor that has few chairs kept there in a line. She was still crying with her closed eyes. He made her sit on the chair and sat in front of her on his knees intently looking at her face that appeared to be cute. "Kiara" ...He rubbed away the tears biting his lower lip feeling not good. It's like three years after that breakup he met her the last day, she was now left as his last hope. He couldn't just let her cry when he knows she was important. "He's changed. We are no more in the college, he won't hurt you." ... He tried to make her understand.

"He will and I know like the early times, you won't say anything to him. No matter what, he does to me." ... She suddenly spoke making him feel relieved and bad at the same time. Okay, so

he knew it. She was only scared of his brother who scares her like a creepy ghost with no legs floating in the air and sharp pointed teeth and handleless creature that you see in a movie.

Otherwise, she is as brave as a knight in front of him. “You are diplomatic Raven. You always were I think I should reconsider my decision of marr—“... Her eyes shot open in shock, heart fluttering with amazing feeling, fingers curling around the fabric of his collar while breasts pressing against his hard torso as he smacked his lips on her supple ones before she could complete that statement.

Tbc...

Chapter 4...

Flashes from the past

“Don’t look at me like that Diaz... Ahh! correction... I mean Carter!”... Girard aforementioned whilst settling in the front seat beside the driver. He faked a glare towards Kiara by sitting slightly crossed such that his back was resting against the door. He trailed his tongue round the circumference of his teeth staring Kiara continuously.

The situation was funny yet very interesting! There was fear, a slight attitude of being in power by becoming Mrs. Carter (his wife) as well as her confident was modified nevertheless, still there was panic and insecurity in her eyes. “Don’t look at him.”... Raven made her hide her face in his neck pulling her close. His one hand was around her shoulders pulling her in his safe protection while the other one covering her eyes such that she could avoid seeing his face. Yet, she peeped through the gap between his fingers at his brother’s face that was craned in her direction.

That sly foxy smirk, narrowed eyes as that of criminal, lips pursed together, Girard looked freaking deadly. Not because he was handsome, he was one of a heck handsome guy still, here—he seemed deadly because of his intensifying gaze that pierced through her.

It was always fun for Girard to play with her. She was his favorite pawn. Uhh! Not a pawn precisely, a favorite toy that provided him utility always as and when he wanted. It was as simple as anything he would bother her, scare her— And she would end up crying just looking at his face, there was (most of the times) no need to do anything to her.

His one glare would be enough.

She was that predictive. Or say innocent! Yes innocent, that she got herself trapped in his billionaire brother’s trap that he has been setting for her for months!

Never mind, he kept constantly eyeing her with glint of fun playing on his face with his smirk while there her newly wedded husband, was trying his best to ruin his moment of fun by covering her face. Raven hardly gazed his brother asking him not to bother her any more in turn, he only got to get mournful chuckles as the answer that clearly meant, ‘Dude, fuck off!’

A minute later, they were all lost in their own thought process. Just within a night. Her life has changed. Their relationship as well as indifference was given a name. A sacred pure name of marriage.

There were still many questions she wanted to ask him still did not do the needful, it is just the start.

They have got whole life to discuss on this topic!

She would not have thought this would happen. She was living her usually boring life by working as an employee for a small-scale company of Texas, living in an apartment that demanded cheap rent with very low voltage bulbs hanging overhead in the kitchen and her small room, eating boring nearby small restaurant's food, wearing recycled clothes that she keeps on sewing every now and then, caring about nothing in life. It was a heck of boring life that anybody could have!

Although she never worried much about her clothes, the uniform was offered by her company, she would not attend any parties, so yeah... It was not a big deal. However, it was yet again like dream come true when she saw her ex-boyfriend standing on her doorstep with his signature heart winning smile, after three years.

Not exactly the same old winning smile, it was different. Because he was standing at her doorstep, who he left behind three years ago after ditching her for another girl.

She was both happy and confused when he proposed her to marry her. Uhh!... Not in the usual way by sitting on his knee and presenting her a diamond ring but however it was it took away her breaths. She has never expected him to stumble on her doorstep after their break up happened back three years ago...

Flashback...

It was their last year of college. They were going to get it completed, she was happy that she would finally be able to move out of that city Louisiana after a week. For the present, they were actually shopping for the farewell party. "Raven what you are wearing on the party eve!"... She asked as they were sitting in KFC.

On not getting answer promptly, she looked at him from her cold coffee, who was smiling whilst looking in his phone. "What are you looking at? Show me!"... He quickly put his phone inside the pocket gaping here and there.

"Nothing"... He replied confusing her.

"I know there is something. Show me no? Please..." She batted her lashes making puppy face. "Don't you love me? Raven... I want to see your phone."... She got up from her place whining like a kid and tried to grasp his phone from his jeans pocket. Raven held her wrist aggressively by standing up, he faced the people around, everyone was amusingly staring them.

Leaving her there, he came out to the parking, huffing in vexation. "Can't you just behave like a normal girl for once?"... As soon as she reached him, he shouted glaring her badly. "Why is it necessary for you to always act like a damn kid?"... He kind of pulled his hairs feeling offended.

Her eyes softened, her lips curled up together feeling bad. Kiara played with her fingers looking down on her shoes as it was not her fault. She was always like this, little childish, little immature and all the way irking. This is how her father weaned her up. He never taught her to be egoistic, over smart, sassy like other girls.

“Why are you getting angry Raven, I just wanted to see whatever you were smiling at.”... She pouted with soft eyes that were instantly avoided by him. It was all love in the beginning, for now— it just frustrated him.

Every guy wishes to have a girl with child like nature but when she depends lot more than necessary on him, it bores him. The same went with him. “Okay I am sorry.”... She stepped ahead to hug him alas, he walked backwards folding his hands against his chest. “I said sorry no, now why are you getting angry?”... She grunted cutely that did nothing but fuelled up his frustration.

“It is a waste of time to talk to you Kiara. I don’t think you’d ever want change!”... And, he wore his helmet, got on the bike and drove away from there leaving her all puzzled and blank.

On the farewell eve...

She was waiting on the gate for her partner to come, clad in black simple court gown... She managed to catch everyone’s eyes, however, the guy, who she badly wished to seduce was nowhere. “What is taking you so long Raven?”... She stomped her foot pressing her upper lip inside her mouth huffing in grouchiness.

The party has started already as she could hear the music as well along with everyone’s voice singing along the song, now she was only the one left to go inside. “I swear I will kill you tonight Mr. Carter. You dumb head cre-“...Earlier than her word could complete, her right shoulder felt a tug making her turn around.

“You!”

Tbc...

Chapter 5...

His betrayal

Kiara swigged her saliva gazing at the guy in her front, her expressions were as if she was seeing the world's worst guy, "What are you doing here in this dark night standing alone on the gate?"... He flirtatiously asked trying to touch her bare shoulder. Left eye as well as ear pierced with metal ring, he ruffled his hairs those seemed to be wet. He was Payton, college's bad boy!

Kiara rolled her eyes moving away from him with clenched jaw, her eyes were red already, having waited till so long she did not know what to do. "Go to hell Payton. Fuck you!"... She showed him her middle finger with a cunning smile making the looks on his face to change from smirking to heck serious.

This girl was something to play with, something to taste slowly with ecstasy. Her tongue was sharper than a butcher's knife. She could kill anyone with her killer beauty! And that intrigued Payton too. He looked away trying to keep his cool, this girl very well knew how to test his vexation.

However, just like the Ray of light passes within a blink, in the same time his facial expressions changed back to the previous ones. The naughty smile with lusty eyes focusing back on her hour glass figure, "Hmmm, trust me Kiara, I badly want you to fuck me. I see you doing that to me every night!"... He replied taking her by surprise. She hated to admit, but he caught her within her web only.

Her face went dull listening to him. She knew Payton lusted her, and there was a soft corner in his heart for her. He would every now and then bother her with his vulgar messages or for that matter openly flirt with her in the college, but she did not know he will one day speak his stupid emotions out. She felt like puking right on his face. He damn deserved that!

In fact, he was supposed to be insulted by every female student of the campus, he has destroyed many lives and betrayed many girls. If she would not have been occupied already then she would have really turned her thoughts into reality.

Regardless, that was not her concern as for then. She has even more serious issue to look at. Her boyfriend had not come to the farewell party! He has been unavailable as long as she can remember after that day in the café.

"Go away Payton... I am already very angry. Do not get on my head! Raven has not come till now and here you are irritating me. Just fuck off before I kill you right here!"... She pulled her hairs shouting manically.

Her frustration was on another level. Firstly no Raven and secondly, here this motherfucker was eating her brain. The day that was supposed to be the best day began with a bad notice and now she reckoned, it was going to end the same way.

However, her concerned face only made him scrunch his eye brows. He briefly stared her face while she longingly gazed across over the gate with hope gleaming in her eyes. It was ironical, thought Payton but the very next second... He busted into laughter severely.

"Are you mad! "... She rudely asked, to which he shook his head. "Then why on the earth are you laughing like this! Idiot"...She stomped her foot, good he was standing away otherwise she would not have mind to stomp her foot on his at all! Payton only held his stomach taking his own good time laughing his heart out, and stood straight as she began to glare him like an angry lioness.

She rested her hands on her butt, fumed in anger as she glared him with the deadliest of her looks with no blinks at all. Payton put a finger on his lips but ended laughing out loud again. There was seemingly some funny scene from a funny movie was going on, he supposed. Well, it really was a movie playing in front of him itself.

"Sorry, sorry. I am soo sorry Kiara but I can't stop myself from laughing. I soooooo pity you."... He spread his hands out wide showing her how much he pitied her. She lifted her hand to give him a punch until, "I pity your innocence actually."... He said that made her stop in her tracks.

Kiara silently stared him... Her eyes softened and face calmly fixated over his body as he disclosed the worst news to her. "Your guy is there inside with Shania. He has come earlier than anyone else. And you want to know why?" he neared her. They were standing at some distance yet quite close that each one of them could hear each other's respective heart beats.

Although she was not supposed to trust his words, many a time he had fooled her speaking shit, trying to break her relationship with Raven nevertheless today, it sure felt like if she would not listen to him today that tomorrow she will have to regret it. That is why, Kiara nodded her head asking him to go further.

"They are participating in the contest together as a couple. In fact Raven is going to propose her tonight."... It hit her right inside of her chest where her heart was beating.

"Stop your nonsense... I know you, this is again one of your tricks to provoke me against him so that we break apart."... She kicked him on the knee, Payton bent down holding his kicked knee wincing in pain.

"I knew it, you will never believe on me. And that is why I have got you the proof. See this."... He showed her, his phone, where it was clearly mentioned in their 'ONLY BOYS' WhatsApp group that tonight Raven would propose Shania. It was him who messaged in the group to his friends to help him out with the best of ideas so that he can propose her.

This broke her badly. Kiara dropped the phone down and ran inside the hall only to witness something that hurt her for three fucking years.

Back to the present...

She sobbed in his arms, now not because of Girard but because of him. And his betrayal. But still, as one can see... She was there in his arms curled up in a tight hug.

It hurt her when she reminisced that night again. Kiara cried seeing them play 'Vodka Shots' where they were asked questions by the host, and they alternatively answered them like a couple. That smile, that happiness she never saw on his face while they were together.

Leave that, she could not dare to go there and talk to him, she simply ran away from there and locked herself in her hostel room and cried the whole night. What could be more hurting than this, she was clearly rejected by him without letting her know. He simply replaced her.

When the morning appeared, there was a knock on her door and she knew who it was. It was him, Raven. Kiara did not even mind opening the door, she laid on her bed crying her heart out.

And guess what, he knew she was told about him and Shania and that was the reason why she didn't show up in the party. Yet Raven had the guts to knock on her door and confront everything from his mouth. He told her, about his attraction towards Shania, he told her how he started liking her and eventually how he decided to move in with her.

"Kiara I know I should have told you earlier but everything happened so quickly that I could not tell you. But honestly, I don't think we are made for each other, types! You deserve best, and I know I am not that best for you."... He said quite many things to her in addition.

She was heartbroken to know he was going to Canada for internship with her. That day, she lost a part of herself.

"Kiara... Kiara!!!"... She was still in her reverie that he had to shake her vigorously to grab her attention. "We are home, let's get going."... She forced a smile, seeing him smile a part of her felt lively while on the other hand, another part within her ached.

She missed this smile, she missed his attention, and now that he was here... She felt like leaving him and taking her revenge on him!

Tbc...

Chapter 6...

Hurt again!

Kiara's point of view...

He opened the door for me. His brother Girard swiftly exited the car and entered in the house leaving us alone. I was happy and felt light hearted to see him not near us any more. His presence was making it difficult for me to breathe. He did not seem the old Girard any more yet his facial expressions were the same. It refreshed my old memories. That was haunting!

I lightly breathed a sigh feeling my body relaxing in comfort at his departure. I was so much lost in myself that I totally forgot Raven has been standing there with an open door asking for me to get out, but his voice could not reach me, I was too into my thoughts. When I nervously gaped his face that was slightly getting into the mode of annoyance, he just looked away.

This was his way to ignore his frustration toward me.

As I placed my foot out, he glared me with expressionless face but I could clearly say he was pissed out. "I am sorry, I was just zoned out."... I stated in a low voice. Since I was close to him and my face was near his chin as he was standing in front of me like a mountain, I was sure he heard me.

Raven did not say anything. His pupils softened the moment as my words reached his ear drums. "Let's go in."... He closed the door behind me while I initiated my walk ahead. I could feel him behind me, I could feel his breaths on my back and I could tell he was busy with his phone.

Everything changed, his looks, habits but not his addiction toward his phone. He seemingly engrossed himself so much into his phone that he did not even recognize when we reached near the low staircase of the bungalow across the main door.

"Ouch!"... Closing my eyes in fear I prepared my self as I was going to hit the ground after twisting my feet due to the high heels, however I never felt the pebbled artificial walkway hurt me.

When I opened my eyes I found my self hanging in his arms with him slightly leaning on me. His eyes locked with mine and suddenly the time seemed like rewinding again. I can't help but assume ourselves back in our college times. And to make it more special for myself, I remembered the day I met him.

It was the third month going on after the college started, it was though for me my first day of college. I was transferred from my college from the Philippines to Don Bosco Institute, USA.

Philippines is where I come from to this versatile Institute of USA, Don Bosco. One of the best colleges of America and counted among the big colleges of America. I was transferred there because I topped the exams and came second in the state.

I don't know the name of the topper who stood first in the state, but I was told he was given admission in Harvard University, Massachusetts. I was nervous and very scared. Meeting new people, changing the college I wanted to be in suddenly and then getting transferred for my own good was too much for me to take in. I was on the gate of DBI (Don Bosco Institute) standing with my heavy two trunks and a backpack.

I was not ready to go there initially. I had no money, no relatives and no idea as to how will I be able to cope up with big people there. Even my English was not that good, just that I could understand it better and manage to reply. I like competition, but competing with the geniuses was not something I could every do!

I had taken a step forward to go in when, "Ohh even I saw the film. But honestly it did not meet up with my expectations."... I heard somebody on my back speak.

The voice was husky, clear and pleasing accent that voice was chiming in my ears whenever it resonated around. It was hypnotizing. I lose my focus that made me stumble with my steps and eventually the trunks from both of my hands fell down while I was just on the verge of slapping the ground. I closed my eyes making it simpler for me to take the pain of falling on the concrete floor but it never came.

Yes, it never came because I was held by my waist.

When I opened my eyes, they met with a pair of pupils that stared me intently thus skipping my heart. The pair of eyes that I fell instantly for!

His lips were appealing, hairs were covering his face as he leaned against my body in a pose. I don't think I would have ever had realized he let his phone fall while he held me tight. That moment was magical! It was so one of the best moments I have had with Raven.

"Kia-raaaa!"... I experienced a hard shake as if I was standing near a construction site where the workers dig the land with that pencil kind of digger instrument and that noise that emits, shakes everyone. It though bought me back to land still I was shocked, what was that for?

After several blinks when I looked at him in my front, I got the whole gist of everything. "I am just done with your day dreaming Kiara Diaz!"... He stomped his foot grinding his teeth together.

"I am sorry I was just-"

"Zoned out again, weren't you?"... He finished it for me.

I passed him a smile with a confident nod letting him know that he caught me. Raven Carter knows me better than anyone else.

No sooner have I bobbed my skull than he faked a cry with a pout. "I don't know how I am going to bear you for a fucking year! You are pain in my ass Kiara..." He bellowed shaking his head vigorously.

It might be his frustration he effused on me, but he does not know it hit me here, right through my heart. "Now get your limbs on working... I am heck tired. You have already ruined my day!"... He hissed moving further. "Now come on in..." Holding my wrist he trawled me along.

Again another badge of hot tears tanked my eyes, I did not dare to let them fall down. But still his words echo as if he was continuously saying them. Just as we were near his room, he let go of my hand and dashed in leaving me on the door.

"Congratulations, he hurt you third time in the day."

My heart mocked.

Tbc...

Chapter 7...

Let's play some game!

I was in the room alone. Afternoon's blazing sun was overhead, Raven has got a call and left for some important meeting immediately. I attempted to ask him what was the matter notwithstanding he only said, "I will tell you everything once I am back, trust me. There are so many things I want to discuss with you." And left not before giving me a feathery kiss on my neck.

And guess what, I was alone in the entire bungalow with Girard. I begged him to not go, I was sure his brother would do something to me once Raven will leave. And that was why I locked the door, to be on the safer side I placed a table across the same to take every possible measure to keep him away from me.

As for now, I was on the bed in my gown with folded legs, I have had curled my hairs into a bun and washed my face. Wearing make up has always been a concern for me. It bothers me, what if acne and rashes appears on my face if I keep it on too long! I am a simple and Indian beauty type of girl. I never wore make up in college as well except on functions.

Uhh!!, that was the reason why Raven proposed me. I was... different. Those says were heavenly beautiful!

Nevertheless, I have got some scars as well. Not some but a lot... If I try to make a line of it then surely it would cover the earth for a thousand times. Raven was good... very good in the beginning. He would care, love and make me happy. But over the years, as we further went ahead with the last year... He changed.

He changed badly. As though the old Raven I knew was replaced with a new kind one. And I hated that... Well no, I never hated him and never will! He was the first person in my life who I can call my family. Coming from an orphanage where I have to frequently face bullying, I was scared of seeing people.

You can say I have had cut myself from this world to stay unharmed. Because every second person in my life hurts me. I don't know why, maybe because I can't fight back. Maybe because I am stupid... Or maybe because I am lenient and not extra clever like other girls!

Yeah... That could be the reason. Even Raven himself said that once. It had been three months to our relationship, but the only problem was... I did not let him kiss me. I was— nervous. I have had seen people kissing but never have been kissed. Well he never said that but I could feel it. And situation worsened when his friends made fun of him that his girlfriend (Me) was a lesbian that was why I was not letting him kiss me. He was kind of pissed off that night until... I gave him away my first kiss.

Well for me... His happiness was more important. His smile, his mood... all of him. I was scared to lose him... I could not even think about it. But now I am happy... Not really in the sense, but I am. I got to marry the guy I love. Agreed it is for some purpose... I know Raven, and I am okay if it is a contract marriage. If it allows me to stay near to him... Be it.

His leave had a great impact on my life. Neither could I cry nor could I smile. It was as if... Along with his departure my emotions left my body. I could not feel the same zeal and excitement I would otherwise have around Raven. These years of separation had me sick. Mentally sick. I was though alive... But never as myself. Just a living body, who could breathe, eats and works for a living.

Yeah, the start of our new life as a couple was not so good but I hope it will be from the next day.

Sometime later...

Hmm, reading magazine is fun. You get to get a lot of information about the new launched products, which heroine is more in demand who is dating whom and so on. My life too is not so good as an individual... But at least it is better than these celebrities who are surrounded with heck of controversies.

I don't know how do they even manage to breathe having so many cameras around them?

"Kiara!!!"... My mind sent alert messages to my body and eventually I was scared to realize who it was calling! "Eh open the door. Come out let's play some game, I am bored."... My eyes popped out of their sockets hearing Girard speak.

Games! He is bored! Me!

No it was not giving me good feeling at all. And I know by game here it means me, and he will bully me again. So I simply sat on the bed keeping aside my anxiety, why! Dude, you forgot I have secured the lock on the door. I need not worry about it. "Are you deaf! I am talking to you! Now don't pretend as if you can't hear me. I know you are in there and probably reading some stupid magazine."

What the!!! I looked around in the room, is there any hidden camera in the room that enables him to see me? No, this can't be happening. I quickly got down the bed looking after everything, especially the flower pots to look for some device when I heard his voice again. "You dumb woman stop looking for cameras in the room... Open the door."... I stilled in my place.

"Then how did you know I am reading magazine."... I stirred. "No I am not going to believe you." And I continued to search.

"Shit. Come on Kiara... You are too predictable. I could possibly tell you what you would do at a point of time. I know you inside out."... He said, his voice sounding playful. "And Kiara you are

too innocent that anyone can fool you easily. And guess was that is why I suggested Raven to chose you for this plan.”

Wait! What?

“Shit?”

Girard surely was sounding different. I immediately unlatched the door only to find him leaning against a wall beside the door. “What kind of plan. What do you mean by suggesting me to choose?” I asked. Now I was starting to doubt the two brothers.

Really everything happened so quickly that I could not make a chance to ask Raven why he wished to marry me. He just stopped by my door after years and proposed me to marry him.

My eyes scanned his posture it was different from what he sounded earlier.

And from nowhere he laughed. “ohhKiara, you did not even change a bit. I can fool you even now taking Raven’s name. My brother is your weakness.”... I looked down, he is correct. Raven is my weakness.... I love him too much that I cannot let him go.

“Ohh, you are right. But, for a second,it felt like you were serious!”...I said putting a stop to his laughter.

We stared each other for a second until, “Huh!” I gasped having him clutch my arm tightly while glaring me hard.

“Why were you not opening the door???”

Shit! I am gone now.

Tbc...

Chapter 8...

Innocent, She!

Kiara point of view....

My throat went dry, the way his eyes narrowed and glared me, I was almost on the verge of passing out. He is handsome, six pack abs, challenging personality but the thing that makes everyone hate him is his nature. That bully nature. Even today when the old friends or old classmates accidentally stumble by and see him, they sweat only by getting a glimpse of his face.

The time really had flown by but his old self still holds that dread that can kill anyone!

"I... I" I fumbled.

He slightly bobbed his head allowing me to go further unfortunately, I did not know where to start from. His eyes were enough for me to start sweating!

Honestly I was never courageous enough to open my mouth in front of him. He threatened me like the monster of any horror movie with disgusting teeth, long nails and lips covered with sticky drool. Yuck!!!!

I could not take my stand ever just because of this imagination of mine towards his personality! He motioned me with a light nod to go on. And I could not for my voice was gone. I could not speak any way in front of him.

He waited for a minute or two until, "Fine, this is the first and last time I am letting you go. Don't you dare to be extra smart in front of me" He sighed freeing my hand. I held my heart thanking my stars.

However, I wonder how on earth did he become so understanding that he let me go without any punishment? In the college he would, not on any cost let any student go without having them answering his questions. Even if he was satisfied with their answers, he would end up giving them the life long threatening memories.

"You really have changed? I can't believe it."... I murmured.

He looked down at my face like a tall man looks down for a kid listening to her words. I backed away moving near my room's door again to me on safer side that if he does anything then I can at least run in and get myself locked until Raven comes.

Rather, he does something I could have never thought him doing so, "Come on we are playing UNO" I was dragged by my elbow unless we came to the hall that has the Uno cards already distributed for two people with two bottle of soft drink and KFC chicken buckets.

Uno!!! Really he wants to play Uno with me?

Gosh, I was just loosing my mind, nothing else. Everything that was happening to me right now was too alien to believe on. I got to marry my freaking ex boyfriend who I loved like my heart beats, then we moved in together in a new bungalow he bought for us and now I was sitting across his bully brother on the floor with Uno cards in my hands playing with him even though I did not want to.

I was liking it. At least this life was better than my life before marriage. I would only have been sitting in my room during weekend, think about the past, cry on emptiness and hollowness in my life and sleep. I was now being able to live my life properly like a living being.

“Uno?”... I announced, I was left with only a Single card that was too the ‘Plus 4’ card.

I cannot suppress my chuckles seeing Girard face. Through out the round I made him take so many cards and now he had a whole bunch of them while here I was sitting on Uno. “Hmm you look dumb but you are freaking intelligent!” I don’t know whether it was his compliment or taunt, yet whatever it was I whole heartedly accepted it for his idiotic expressions were worth watching.

Girard thought for so much time as to what should he do next, and then he threw a ‘Plus4’ card on me. I pretended to be very sad where from within only I know how happy I was. “You might be intelligent, but I am an ace in playing Uno? No one can win this game against me.” He self praised himself and I rolled my eyes.

“Come on, take it.” He took a sip from his soft drink laying down on his elbow partially. I nodded in yes that he proudly pulled his collars nevertheless the next moment when I threw my plus 4 cards on the floor he screamed loudly hitting his head in defeat.

Gosh I was damn happy. “Freaking hell? How is that even possible?” he exclaimed. The guy who had always troubled me in the college was now sitting in front of me like a loser! I did a happy dance running all around in the house shouting loudly ‘I won! I won!’ And there, he like the stupidest person that he is, preferred to eat chicken rolling his eyes.

I twirled and whirled around everywhere in the house. There was no stopping to my excitement until, “Ahhhawww Kiara? Not again” I covered my mouth in fear because I knocked Raven down in happiness!

He sat on the floor balancing his weight on his elbow while his phone was lying on the floor beside him. Raven caressed his butt wincing in pain.

“Ohh!Kiara, you are really a trouble making ass!”

“I am sorry I am Sorry I am sorrrrryyyyy.” I bent down pulling Raven to sit straight, I can see he hurt his back.

Girard was enjoying the scene eating now from, what the fuck, my bucket, shamelessly. He was on his stomach resting on a big fat feathery pillow that I bought. "Will you ever sit quietly or is it necessary for you to create mess around. Around me, to be precise?" he rubbed his left arm.

"I am sorry actually I was too happy to see you coming in." I told him rubbing along on the affected area. "You know I defeated your rowdy brother today. He is so dumb I am telling you." I laughed on my own joke whispering the last sentence near his ear while there, my laughs faded away within a second realizing that, Raven was intently gazing my face as if he has never seen me ever before.

I stilled, my heart beats started to grip the pace. His eyes never left mine and the expression he held were like stomach churning.

Author's point of view...

Kiara looked down sensing her cheeks turning red over his burning gaze however what she didn't know was the inner turmoil that was playing inside of him.

"He is not dumb Kiara, you are too innocent that you can't understand the difference in his behavior. You didn't defeat him, he purposely lose the game so that you can win!" Raven spoke to himself looking towards Girard who smiled with hands raised high up in surrender.

Raven caught him?

The two brothers talked using only their eyes that poor Kiara could hardly understand anything. The two of them smiled, looked down then sometimes at Kiara then finally at her finger that has his ring on it. It was the proposal ring that Raven gave her years ago while proposing her.

She still, has it?

He was intrigued to see her affection towards him. In spite of experiencing the worst of heart break, unexpected betrayal and his cruelty she was still ready to love him madly. Indeed, Raven rejected one of the most precious gifts of the life he was presented with, by God.

"It still hurts?" She inquired with a pout again hanging on his shoulder. This act of hers made Raven to pull her close and kiss her forehead affectionately.

"Nope, not like before." He replied hugging her close to his heart.

Agreed he took some of the most nonsensical decisions in life yet it was not too late to mend things right? Uhh... maybe that is why now Kiara was standing in his arms being hugged tightly because he understood her worth in his life.

Or maybe because of something else?—Uhh, only God knows.

Tbc...

Chapter 9...

A drizzling night!

The clouds were slightly drizzling, there was fog covering the area while the dew condensed on the transparent glass of Kiara's window was slipping down. The atmosphere was good. Perfect one to sit silently near the balcony with a hot cup of coffee and talk.

The lights were switched off, only the ceilings lights were turned on that made all the object, show pieces to gleam in its light. Raven was in the wash room changing his clothes. While Kiara stood across the balcony enjoying the beautiful scenery there, many a thoughts struck her mind!

The month of October with winters approaching was best. The heater was on, how everything unlike a new couple's bed, their bed was not decorated with flowers! There were no fragrance candles too. Even he did not make her feel as though they would be having their first night tonight!

She let out a sigh leaning on the closed door of the balcony. Girard was gone. They had their dinner together for the first time, and to her luck he did not do anything to mess with her. In fact, it was fun to have dinner with him. She got to talk too much while the two guys listened to her silently from time to time passing chaste smiles sometimes at her or sometimes whilst looking at each other.

"Hmm you still like winters!" Kiara turned around hearing Raven's voice. He grinned lightly joining her near the balcony watching the drizzling sky. It was indeed beautiful. She bit her lips, his hairs were wet, and perhaps he took a shower again!

He had a khaki cultured tee put on with track pants. To her surprise, there was no phone in his hand and Kiara did not even wait for a moment to exclaim it, "I am surprised!" he marginally inclined his head upwards inquiring her. "Because you don't have your phone with you. Asit used to be your girlfriend, right!"

Although her exclamation was not made with the intention to taunt him still it hit him negatively. He blew some air awkwardly looking outside the window behind her. Once she realized this, she bit her tongue resuming back her watching. Her back slightly crushed with his chest, they were standing close silently.

Kiara regretted on her words. She was unsure what he might be feeling about it. Well, his phone was his addiction three years ago during their college times. But it's, three years later now. And it was enough time to have so many things changed.

Indeed, many things changed, just that the two of them does not know about it. In truth, he wanted to tell her that his devotion towards his phone has reduced now rather he potentially

cannot say that. "Many things have changed in these years Kiara. So, many of my habits too!" he announced.

They continued to look out. Neither can she reply nor can he take the conversation further. "Hmm may be that is why you decided to marry me!" Seemed as if indirectly she was chipping the fact that she was not reckoning to do so.

He kind of uncomfortably moved his shoulders. It was as if he was shoving away some burden from there. Raven moved a bit away until he made her look at him. Kiara firmly stilled her gaze at his expressionless face. "Kiara, I know it was an unplanned marriage but trust me I will keep you happy. I very well know you have many grudges in your heart, I will answer all your questions but for now all I need is you." There was nothing else she could wish to listen for!

After being betrayed, being left alone and being insulted for infinite times she cannot let herself drown in his melting voice. There were saline drops of happiness making their appearance across her retina. Kiara let her weight rest on the transparent door while she stared him.

He has become more handsome. Or say, he has become a perfect man. These three years molded him in a way that he now has all the desirable features carved within him that any women would want to own once. "I need you Kiara. You are right, I know you know I married you for a purpose and you doubt what can it be, but whatever it is Kiara— I have a feeling that you will understand it." She was petrified, not because he was talking seriously about something that was yet to be revealed but because now even his eyes were glistened with tears.

The tears hung on his lower lashes all set to slip down. His fair face was marginally becoming pink. She never saw him crying, this was for the first time. "Raven!"

"Shhhh! Please let me speak today. I need to confess so many things!" he hushed interrupting her whilst placing his finger on her lips.

Her lips quivered coming in contact with the rough skin of his finger. His skin was cold. Just as cold as ice. She wondered what was making him freeze in a warm room that was heating under high warming temperature of the heater. The drizzling was now converting into full rains.

The bolting thunders, the harsh winds and the passing slow time gave another meaning to this moment. Their breaths mingled together, his hands slowly slid southward stopping on her waist. She was sandwiched between him and the door with a romantic background.

Regardless, the current moment was no romantic. Agreed, there was heat, dim lights, empty house, her quivering lips, his raging breaths, their sandwiched bodies however no passion. Kiara brought her hands across his shoulders. She panicked whether she to caress his face or not, for that was one of the things he hated.

But when he himself tilted his head whilst making his cheek come in contact with her palm, she astonishingly fixated her eyes on his face. His lashes were patches together, he seemed to be enjoying every moment of this. "You hated it earlier!" She was forced to ask.

So many changes, so many shocks yet there was no reason to it. She felt like she was brought in an opposite world of the real one where everything was opposite. If in the real world her life sucked than in this world, it was as blooming as a new bud that has come to life. If that world he hated to be pampered by her, he left her by breaking up with her, than here, he came back giving a name to their relationship and allowed her to do everything she loved to.

“But I love it now.” He smiled unlatching his lashes back. The tears trickled down only to fall on her lips. He stared the tear drop on her lower lip while she uncomfortably quivered in his arms.

She wanted him back in life, so was he back now however the added benefits twirled her heart. The ecstasy was supposedly rising between them. On predicting what he was capable of doing next to her, she came up with an excuse to get freed. “Uhhh, we shall go to bed and sleep. You might get late for office otherwise!”

Nice excuse though whatsoever it did not work on him. Rather, he let out a chuckle leaning on her. “Raven !” Regardless there was no stopping to his deed, he simply brought her face nearer using his left arm, his fingers got lost within the forest of her thick smooth hairs. She fisted his t-shirt in her grip feeling him get closer and closer thus increasing her uneasiness, and he smacked his lips on hers making everything to turn blur.

Tbc...

Chapter 10...

Confession.

Raven's point of view...

Her skin was as soft as silk. The more close I held her the more I craved her skin. She has not changed even a bit. She had maintained herself like the old Kiara from college. Everybody hated me, all the guys. They wanted to own her as theirs but I got to mark her with my name.

I met her on the college gate for the first time. It was her first day, she was a transfer and the topper of her state who was given the opportunity to study in our esteemed institute. Her first gaze was magical. It was enough to bring someone like me on his knees.

She spelled me such that I ended up proposing her.

I ravished her skin as much as I can. She never permitted me to go beyond neck kisses that was frustrating, but having her so close— was like a dream come true. Where in the college all the others were mentally raping her I could not stand it. She was my damn girlfriend, I had the rights to do everything to her but then also I could not do so. Just because she was very shy.

I still remember how much she made me wait for a lip kiss. I do not think she would have considered giving that to me unless I would not have had a fight in the college campus with my hostel roommates. They called her lesbian! Only I know how badly I controlled myself from not separating their heads from their body.

Regardless now I realize why everyone did wanted to claim Kiara! She is as hot as the blazing sun with more than necessary sex appeal. I continued to go down and down in the south until I reached her cleavage. Having given it a glance as I opened my lips to attack her skin, "Raven! Raven" I heard her call me.

Nevertheless, I did not stop. I just could not keep myself in my limits. I have waited for years for this moment. "Raven, where are you lost? You are scaring me!" I blinked my eyes and— what the!!!!

We were standing against the balconies door only. She was constantly trying to make me speak while I was DREAMING WITH OPEN EYES!!!! SHIT!

She batted her lashes apprehensively whilst tenderly stroking my cheeks. "Hmmm" I dejectedly concealed my face in the flexure of her neck. She seemingly mollified in my arms suspending her entire weight on my shoulders that a small smile crept on my mouth.

After break up or for that matter having gone through worst phase in life people tend to change. They become somebody else but Kiara, she has not transformed herself. And this nature of hers makes me die a thousand deaths every day.

I though did leave her but every freaking moment I missed her. I missed every habit of her, every stupid thing she used to say just to make me happy— I missed that all. Uhh!! may be because SHE showed me my place and my mistake as to what have I done to my life by rejecting Kiara and selecting HER.

Shame on me that I left Kiara.

Somebody said it very true, 'We tend to miss people once they are gone forever from our lives'

I can better relate this maxim to my life. Only I know how much I regretted letting her go. She just wanted me and I played with her feelings, I betrayed her. I do not know if I ever be able to get her forgiveness! She is good, she might forgive me, yet I will not be able to be completely satisfied.

Not at least when I know I am yet betraying her. I snuggled her skin, she smells the same, her cologne as and when hit my nostrils, and it worked on my senses in a way that I just wanted to cuddle her until sleep over takes.

Having picked her up in my arms I walked toward our bed. She must be thinking why aren't we spending this night like other married couple none the less I cannot do it. I have ruined her happiness many a times— now I do not want to ruin her innocence with my unethical actions, no more.

I am sure she will hate me once she knows my reason of marrying her.

I am selfish, I always was. I ditched her three years ago for my lust towards Shania and now I came back to her for my own reasons. "I am sorry!" I bought her palms across my face kissing them one by one. I left my goddess for someone who never deserved to be at her place.

"Why!" Giving her a peck on her head as I smiled focusing on her pout, she smiled back. "Why sorry!" I can't help myself from sarcastically laughing on my condition, when I became so freaking lucky that I got her back in my life!

After being hurt so many times by me she was asking me WHY? Do I still have to quote out the reasons to her? I cannot trust my own ears.

"For hurting you. For leaving you.

For insulting you and above all, for replacing you!" she stilled at my confession. Her eyes bore so many emotions. They were red already, so I cannot make out whether it was because of what I said or because of what had happened between us moment ago near the balcony.

No matter what it might be, I know it was me who made them red! "I regret my wrong decisions every day, every moment of my life! And leaving you was one of them." There was no need for her to describe her vehemence— it was apparent on her face.

How much I missed this?

But can't refuse to the fact it was me who left her!

We sat in silence staring each other's face, perhaps looking for love in each other's eyes. She was in the verge of bursting into tears, yet I ought to salute her tolerance. She has always been good at suppressing her emotions. Maybe even now she was doing it to not show me!

"Say something! I know you are still hurt. And maybe you want to leave me too just like how I did to you just you cannot show it." I smiled while she frowned. She humped with bubbled cheeks all set to shower me with her vexation.

Unless, she only pounded on me like a predator pinning me to the bed. I was amazed with this act of hers. She was never a fierce Kiara but a timid one who could not even fight back my brother for his bullying.

I wanted to laugh when she began to hit me with her tiny fists mumbling something that pounded from over my head! "Raven Carter I just want to kill you." What the, she was in tears again. Did I do something wrong.

Before I could say anything in my defense her hiccups were resonating in the room. "Ehh, Kiara! Please don't cry, I swear I was just joking with you. I know you cannot even kill a mosquito then planning such a thing is far to be thought by you!" I exclaimed that came out more like pulling her leg.

Though she stopped crying but what she stated next really played with my heart severely! "No, I can kill a mosquito. I even killed two while you were gone in the afternoon" Like seriously, I chuckled while she nodded in yes.

God, I thank you for gifting me this drama queen.

Tbc...

Chapter 11..

Ward-38.

The drizzling night was now replaced by foggy night. The room has become seemingly comfortable for the night unless, Kiara turned to her right side. She roamed her palm to feel him beside her but to her surprise the side was empty.

She lazily unclasped her lashes rubbing them sluggishly. "Raven!" she yawningly called got his name while in the manner moving around her eyes in the entire room. The white shining flooring has the reflection of all the objects kept in the room. His big fledged room with a massive foyer, a comfy set of peach colored sofas, and the teak wood furniture with white paint complimented the room well.

There was floor to ceiling long balcony curtained with shady curtains while the ceilings dim lights made everything clear that there was no one else other than her in the room. Yet to hit her satisfaction level and make an increment in her utility, she sneaked out of the bed. Her feet felt relieved as soon as the skin came in touch with the floor.

It was as warm as a hot spring shower room. Kiara slowly approached the door of the washroom, she initially knocked waiting patiently for a reply from the other side of the door. When it did not come she asked firmly, "Raven, Are you in there?" she repeated her interrogative sentence thrice and when yet again no reply came, she decided to sneak in.

After a hard breath, as she unlatched the door, she recognized the lights were off indicating absence of no one in there. On switching the lights on, as she gave a glance around in the wash room her eyes noticed a paper placed crumpled, near the mirror.

She got hold of it. It did not take a second for her to realize it was thrown in vexation after crimping it. Who could it be than her rowdy husband! She wondered. Anyway just as she opened the knot of the paper, and flattened it with her fingers, she read out something like an address.

'724 Sun Drive Seattle, WA 98136'

"Whose address could this be?" she thought reading it again and again.

It was from Seattle where she was currently staying. Kiara folded it nicely before exiting the room. She trailed down the stairs looking for his presence there. On learning that not only Raven but also his brother Girard was absent, it pushed her to think in another way.

'What is going on with these two? Where could they possibly be at this hour of night? What is up with them?'

She thought looking here and there in the entire area. Indeed, it was a matter of thought, her first night over her husband's place, and he was absent! Not only that his brother too. She could have understood and justified his non-occurrence alone nonetheless, having his brother gone too along with him did not give her a good feeling.

Kiara tried to call him, his number proved out to be unavailable. She tried with Girard's number too, yet the same with him. Now it has started to bother her in a negative way. "Where are they? How can they just leave the house leaving me uninformed!" she grumbled hitting her fists on the arm of the sofa whilst settling down.

And the irony was they were situated in the isolated area of the city where one would hardly get a vehicle to travel. In fact, she could make out the impossibility just by the absence of the watchman. He probably would have bought the bungalow in hurry just to settle in here with her in a day!

"Just be back once Raven Carter, I will show you! I am not the old Kiara who will entertain your frequent mistakes anymore!" She hissed fixating her eyes on the closed door.

If there, Kiara was restlessly waiting for his arrival then here poor Raven was in another problem that cannot be described. "Girard, Why him?" Tears trickled down his cheeks as he leaned across his shoulders crying his heart out.

He was in the night dress only, so was Girard. Even his brother's eyes were red though there was no trace of tear in them. He has to be strong if not Raven! "Dude be strong, he will be alright. He just needs some time." Patting his brother's back Girard sighed looking at the closed door of 'Ward 38'

The passages were all silent and empty. Only a few lights were ignited on the floor while the two brother stuck together providing each other some comfort. "He can't be, in fact he will never be alright Girard. Just because of that whore my son is in danger! Just because of her!" He snarled fisting against his brother's arm.

If there has been anybody else, they would have surely gone mad on learning the reality. "Shut up Rave, you are his father, just stop speaking shit about him. You have found the cure to his disease. Okay!!! Your son will be alright soon." Glaring hard over Raven's face Girard grumbled like a maniac.

Girard's point of view...

I have told him a thousand times to not lose hope, Billy will be fine but no, he does not want to listen to it. He has accepted the worst. However, he does not know even the worst can be tackled if you have the right person beside you helping you out.

And that right person is Kiara, she can only help him get out of this mess. Only she can help Raven's son, Billy.

Yes, you heard me right. My brother Raven has a son, a two year old little dude who looks his carbon copy. Everything about him is pleasing but his disease, which he got because of his vulgar mother. Nah, not really. She never had anything but her unethical and unwanted habits, addiction got him at this point in life where he is surviving.

“Girard he is just a kid, a two year old kid. I can’t stand to lose him. Please do something.” I cannot stand his condition when he pleaded in front of me with joined hands. “They are not letting me near him. Please ask them, just once. Only once and then I will not bother them again.” He added with an agonized cry.

There were two officers appointed for the safety of Billy. None of the two of his parents—Raven or his mother is permitted to meet him. In fact, they cannot even stand near him unless the hearing is passed in their case. Till then, Billy is made to live with our parents and his grandparents.

“I wish I could help you brother! But I am helpless too. I cannot do anything for you. You know you cannot see him. They will otherwise not let you near his ward too.” I chipped setting his hairs.

Ironical, it is to say that though he has become a father, yet he is a child from within. I don’t know what he will ever do without me. He is still the same old Raven who relies on me, his elder brother for every impossible things in his life, the brother who he thinks can do any fucking impossible even turn out to be possible!

“But I want to see him, he is my son. Can’t they just see how much I am dying to see his face?” He cried bitterly like a child himself and I cannot do anything to solve his problem.

I decided to stay quiet and give him his own time to cry. In all this mess Raven has become a walking dead, he has forgotten to cry or show his emotions. Sometimes I feel bad for poor Kiara that she has to experience his anger all the times. But who to blame, he has become like this because of some reasons.

I wish that I could help my brother! Unfortunately, I cannot. The court has strictly said that unless the hearing is passed none of the two of Billy’s parents can meet him except on the stipulated days. Raven can only meet him on Wednesday for an hour and the mother on Friday for an hour. And if by any chance they are found meeting him on any other day as otherwise mentioned day, they will be restricted from seeing Billy forever until the court’s final hearing.

“Just a little more Rave, a little more. You know well we are about to win the case and get the authority to keep Billy with us. Just a little bit more!” I spoke silently near his ears thus calming his cries down for he knows, I am not giving him false hopes!

Tbc...

Chapter 12...

His outburst!

Author's point of view...

It was 7.00 in the morning when Girard and Raven decided to take a leave from the hospital. Billy though could not get relief from his pain but as for now he was sleeping peacefully under the effects of sedatives. Once he was peacefully taken over by the slumber, the appointed officers allowed Raven to only see him through the circular mirror built in the door.

His parents, Mr. And Mrs. Carter were sitting next to little boy on the either side on the stools. They were not so old, their physical appearance— pleasing and impressive. While Mr. Hardin Carter was dressed in his suit, there Mrs. Kelly Carter seemed beautiful in her night gown. She was time to time caressing baby Carter's hair adoring his pallid face. On the contrary, Mr. Carter tiringly sighed, he was in his formal clothes indicating he might have returned from the office after over time work.

What can he do rather than over time when his sons are going through the hard phase of life? It was 2.00 am in the night when before going to bed Mrs. Carter resolute to check upon their baby where she noticed him turning all cold and white. He was not breathing properly, his pulse rate was low as heck, she cried anxiously calling for Mr. Carter and the two of them rushed to the hospital.

On the go, Mr. Carter informed the two brothers about the problem and since then it is this time that they have to spend waiting for their little heir to be alright! "Mom, take care of him. And please, for God's sake give me every minute update." He lightly pecked on her cheek longingly staring over his unconscious junior's body.

Well he was one of those unlucky fathers who never got the chance of spending time with his child. The two years of Billy's life has been painful. As painful as anything! "Take care Rave, don't worry about Billy. Once he is okay, I will video call you. Hmm. I Love you." She replied with a consoling smile.

Girard from the back took a deep sigh. He has been noticing time ever since they left, the grown anxiety in his mind was not giving him peace. What would Kiara be thinking? They have been out since the night, it is now the morning!

"Yes Rave, you go and rest. Kiara must be up and looking for you. Go and handle her, the earlier you tell her everything the better." Nodding over their father's words Raven and Girard left not before giving a peck on Billy's face.

And very soon they were back on the roads driving back to their newly bought abode where his newly wedded fake wife was waiting for him restlessly. During the drive, Raven preferred to sit

silent, neither was he in any mood to speak anything now was his voice supporting him. It was stuck in his mouth.

Only he knew what was going on with him! Having a two year old kid who has constantly been unwell and frequently admitted to the hospital for weeks, Raven cannot focus on his life. Indeed, one wrong decision can change years of relationships and cause non-repairable damage. It is always necessary to think twice before making any determination in life.

Never mind, pulling out the escalator Girard stopped the car outside the gate, since there was no watchman he himself has to get down and open the same. Meanwhile, Raven slipped out of the belt and walked to the door leaving his elder brother behind to look at the matter on his own.

No sooner have he undid the door than his eyes noticed a frustrated Kiara sitting on the sofa, her eyes were tired clearly showing that she has been awake ever since he had gone, "Have you seen the time?" the very first question was dropped on him by her.

He so wished to tell her the truth, pull her in a hug and cry on her lap however it was not easy. If his untold absence can turn her insane, let alone the secret of him being a father of two year old kid. He preferred to ignore her, this was not the time to speak. In fact, he was in no condition to answer or argue with her on any topic.

He rubbed away the traces of tears from his face. The available light in the foyer was enough for Kiara to notice his red eyes and get onto the conclusion that he was crying. Although she wished to know what could make him cry but then also she determined to be stiff and behave like a typical wife and charge her husband with questions.

Today, she has made her mind up that she will not let him go so easily, not on any cost!

Okay, Raven did not want to let her earn the look that he was crying, so he directly initiated his walk toward the stairs until, "I asked you something Raven! Where have you been? Do you have any idea how long have I been waiting for you? Leave that, not only you but your brother was out too, tell me what am I supposed to conclude out of this! Just a day of marriage and you are behaving the typical YOU! "

" Ohh just shut uppp!" Kiara stumbled behind being taken by surprise by his sudden outburst. She was shocked to see panting with such fierce in his eyes that seemingly spoke about what he could do to her! He descended the hardly climbed stairs and got hold of her arm.

Pulling her close, he glared her so badly that scared even her soul. She has seen him angry but not this much. "I am not answerable to you regarding my absence and presence Kiara Diaz, do not forget who you are, just a contracted wife! Don't expect me to answer all your stupid questions." He stated with his raspy, hoarse voice turning her still.

He wanted to withdraw his hands, take those words back and kiss her but her clingy nature was enough to boost his aggression. Raven darted his devilish gaze on her quivering lips, the way

they shivered he knew she was shaken badly to the deep. He so regretted yet there was no way his inner turmoil was letting him behave sober.

There was fear, hurt and guilt in her eyes. She looked down thus breaking the long eye lock which she reckoned he did not intend to break at all. And that was the moment when he recognized her eyes were teary!

Meanwhile, after making sure the car was parked just as Girard entered through the door, he swigged his saliva looking at the toughness of the moment. There his mentally disturbed brother was unknowingly hurting the woman who was supposed to be key to his freedom!

“Raven! Shit, this guy.” He mumbled quickly walking up to them. “Rave! Kiara!” he interrupted them that eventually made his grip to go loose around her arm. Raven, when realized what was he doing, blinked his lashes and in a swift drifted his hand back looking here and there.

Tbc...

Chapter 13...

Unexpected truth!

The situation was as tensed as it could be right now. Kiara shed tears of hurt and pain while Girard helplessly fixated his eyes on her. He had his jaw clenched in sympathy which he has for her. It was not her mistake, yet she has to take his out burst. Raven immediately left after that incident and right now only Kiara was left in the house with her cruel husband's bully brother who was proving out to be her only company now.

Having settled together on the breakfast table, they silently sat not uttering even a single word. She was lost in her reverie crying her heart out quietly while her brother-in-law sat there watching her longingly. "What is wrong with him? What is he hiding from me, and you?" Girard was playing with a fork until he heard her heavy voice clearly indicating her agony.

Although he thanked the lord that she at least spoke but still there was this feeling where he felt that they were just putting the poor soul in a mess where she did not belong to. He looked down at her nails that were scratching against the wood of the furniture. Even the sound of her scratching was audible clearly.

Girard licked his lips preparing himself for the war she has asked him to dive in. It is not going to be easy to answer her questions. She has infinite doubts, innumerable complaints, immeasurable hurt accumulated in her heart and what not!

And the only person that has the answers to all her queries was caught up in his own mental illness. Raven was the correct person who could provide the proper feedback for all her inquiries however he was too hooked up in his problem that he cannot give time to himself, let alone her.

"Kiara, you know him. Whenever he is disturbed, he pours his disappointment on others." He lied, because he did not know how to handle this!

Girard cursed his brother mentally for ruining everything. One day his outburst will give them a good lesson! Never mind, his answer did not seem to satisfy her. Amidst her tears she narrowed her eyes while at the instant moment her eye brows arched up at his statement forecasting her disagreement.

Kiara swiftly shove away the saline drops from across her cheeks. She slightly upped her face staring the ceiling and breathed in deeply. When she came back to a normal posture with her pupils looking focused on his face and eyes challenging him, poor Carter had to scratch his forehead in nervousness.

“We both know you are lying Girard, tell the truth. At this moment of time, I want to hear ‘the truth’ that you guys have been hiding from me, I know, and we both know there is something I am still not made aware of!” This time it was Girard’s turn to arch his brows in suspect.

She was sounding so demanding and alert that gave him unusual feeling. ‘Why is she talking so confidently and suspiciously? Did she get to know something?’ He thought reaching for the fork again.

There was pin drop silence, even the sound of the passing by light winds could be heard. Girard bit his lower lip darting his gaze on her, so did she. There were some unsaid sentences exchanged via their silent conversation. Having stared each other for a brief moment, Kiara looked away.

Neither does she want to take this any further nor stress her poor brain. Her idiot husband is enough of dose for her poor organs! She was done with this topic and wanted to end right then and there until what Girard stated next, gave her another reason to stress her brain and think more.

“Kiara, there are many things which you need to know. I agree that. But believe me I am not the correct person to answer them. I wish if I could tell you that, but I am forced to keep my mouth shut.” She sat straight erecting her back, seemingly appearing nervous.

Her face depicted some insecurity, pain and some unidentified grief. Girard could not make out what it was for, yet he was sure, if here they were hiding something— precisely the truth about Billy from her then there was something she was hiding too. What! No idea yet he can bet it, there was something.

“In fact, it will answer all your doubts if you ask me. But, only Raven can do that. Yes your husband has all the answers to your queries.” He added intriguing her even more.

She twitched her lips looking down on her hands, her nails to be exact. There were some flakes of the scratched out wood inside of her nails. “He is not in the right condition to answer you but whenever he will do that, you will realize that his acts were out of depression. He does not want to hurt you not when he knows YOU ARE THE CURE TO HIS PROBLEMS.” Girard quickly palmed his mouth regretting on what he just blurted out!

Kiara’s point of view...

What does that mean!

From the beginning only I knew there is something behind Raven’s proposal otherwise he would not have married me. However, today Girard’s words made it as clear as crystal. I did not know whether to be sad or happy, my ex-boyfriend married to me for a reason and I don’t know what it is.

“Ohh, so you are simply saying I am brought here in this city from Amsterdam just because there is something which I can do? If that is why you call me as ‘The cure for your brother’s problem’ Is it like that?” Yes it was harsh and not something that can be discussed now still, I cannot suppress my aggression.

May be his meaning was different and not what I took it to be, may be it was for something else still I was annoyed. First of all, he suddenly comes to meet me from nowhere then, he proposes me to marry him and when not even a day has passed, he behaves as if I am nobody and leaves the house in vexation.

Does he think there is some joke going on?

Like really.

I rose from my seat breathing heavily. It is better to leave or else I will end up disclosing to him everything. Just as I turned around to exit the house and take some fresh air, I experienced that my wrist was being clutched. “Kiara, you are taking it wrong. I didn’t mean that.” I know he didn’t but I also know he neither told me the truth.

Agreed, the situation is critical. They will have to take every step carefully but that does not mean I will always have to bear his (Raven’s) ebullition!

“It’s okay Girard I don’t want to listen to anything, it will just ruin everything. Let me just go out for sometime.” I said freeing my hand from his grip, however it seemed that he was not ready to let go of me.

Yet I tried my best, I scratched his hand in a way that must have left many nail scratches on his white skin alas he stood unaffected. Turning around as I glared him hard with my dark red eyes, I shuddered staring the tears in his eyes.

What the heck?

It was more funny than serious! Watching the rough and tough Girard Carter who liked to make others cry, is crying. I was not in my reverie until he pulled me toward him with a hard push with those bully Girard’s expression entertaining his face. My heart skipped its beats many times. I was sweating badly that even his grip anyway loosened around my wrist because of the perspiration.

He brought me close by placing his other hand on the back of my head, and deviously grumbled. “When I said you are taking everything wrong, it means you really are!” I know he did that with the intention to scare me but what he actually didn’t know was that, it rather pinned my laughs.

My eyes streamed while I laughed near his face sardonically. He was taken aback at my unexpected behaviour. And even, his astonishment was beyond limits when I stated my next sentence exploding his mind. “Then why don’t you just tell me the truth? Why don’t you just

tell that you are doing all this for Billy, Raven's baby?" No sooner did I say that than he promptly let go of my hair stumbling backwards at the realization as to what I just said.

Yes, I knew the truth since the very beginning!

Tbc...

Chapter 14...

Disturbed souls.

Author's point of view...

There has to be at least some space for a person to be able to breathe unfortunately, for Girard, it seems as if he was locked in a square shaped room that hardly had a steps distance around. His throat turned as dry as desert while his eyes filled up with new badge of tears. Having mixed emotions of fear, regret, anxiety and serenity going through him, he looked nowhere but her face.

On the other hand, she only smiled. A smile that said so many things yet nothing. Kiara was baffled to see him in such state. Never have she ever in her entire life thought that she will one day get to see her bully crying like that in front of her. The sight was amusing but still saddening.

The two of them stood face to face staring each other. Even not for a nano second did their eyes diverted or blinked. Such a critical secret which the two brothers were intending to hide from her until the right time could arrive, she knew about it already.

Girard not only did want to ask as to how in the name of heaven did she get to learn about it but also when? It was serious issue, indeed— one wrong step could have them lose Billy's custody. And to have him only to them, they came up with the idea to get Raven married to a woman who will be the best mother for Billy and then, the court will be left in no position to say a NO to the Carters from having their heir.

However, it appeared like the almighty had something else in store for them. They must not be having the slightest idea that the tables would turn in such degrees hence leaving them in no condition to stand strong!

Any ways, the bright sky had its lights peeking in the grounds of the bungalow through the transparent wall to ceiling window that attached the garden on the other side. It was only the environment consisting the chirping of birds, rustling of leaves and the typical smell of a Monday morning that occurred to be constant otherwise the two humans standing across each other seemed to have interchanged their personality.

Yes, Kiara who was supposed to be scared and shocked has gone berserk watching their obstinacy regarding the case. They wanted her badly, yet they did not want to let her know about it either. On the other hand, Girard who was supposed to be all bananas and annoyed was the one behaving like a timid cat in the hot water that cannot swim and reach the other side of it.

Neither of the two would have liked to give up on the 'stare game' if the landline would not have rung henceforth breaking their riverie. No sooner did it hit their ear drums they hurriedly looked in different directions wiping their tears away. "He-hello!" Girard choked up on his voice, he had to give out a strong cough in order to normal his heavy voice.

After listening to the person on the other side he lazily put the receiver back in its place whilst turning around to look for Kiara. He panicked watching her go upstairs. "Kiara I can explain! Please listen." He rushed behind her although, she was gone to their room avoiding his calls.

Later that evening, Raven's point of view...

Like any other day, I couldn't concentrate on my work. And again dad had to do it. He had to attend all my meetings and look after the work I was supposed to do. I know this is not right, I will have to be focused and manage both my personal and professional life but what can I do I cannot help it.

Whenever I try to divert my mind from Billy and do something I just end up thinking about him more. My poor baby has to go through so much in his little life. I hate it. I hate myself because I am the reason behind it. I wish I could take action in the correct time.

I wish I could make right decision!

My driving was harsh. Driving with nigh speed I intended to reach home quickly. I am sure Kiara might have locked herself in the room and must have been crying maniacly. That is again because of me. I cannot manage my emotions. I always have to ruin things by going ape on other especially, her.

I did that in the past now in the present as well. Huh.

Seriously, I cannot stop my chuckles. I feel ashamed of myself! I don't know what kind of man am I? Neither can I take care of my kid nor can I take care of my relationships. I am of no use. I wish if I could mend everything by just disappearing somewhere? Even that is not possible. I have responsibilities after all.

Responsibility of being a father, son, a brother and above all- responsibility of being a husband. Yes, I am bound to so many responsibilities but there is none which I could follow and respect whole heartedly. I was never good enough to take care of them. Never.

However, today I know what I will have to do!

Enough of my reluctance. It is better to tell Kiara about my problems rather than hurting her every time when she asks me about it. It is better to open up everything to her rather than just avoiding her questions. I need her in my life. I need her in my hardship. Only she can pull me out of my darkness.

It will be difficult to tell her about my son but I will have to. I have committed enough mistakes to in my life not any more. And I know what am I supposed to do to make it easier.

Author's point of view...

Raven's car was soon inside of the gates of their new abode. Nervously stepping out of his car he pulled out the bouquet of her favourite— fresh lily flowers from the back seat before closing the door shut.

One could spot nervousness on his face, also the guilt that has been killing him the entire day. Only he knows how many times did he call her and yet disconnected it before it could connect just because he was guilty. He could not mend it just by talking to her over a phone call. Not at least when there was so much to talk about and no idea as in how to start it!

Never mind, soon as he twisted the knob of the door and stepped in, he was too slapped with the same saddening environment that has been prevailing since the morning after what happened between Girard and Kiara.

He was astonished to see nobody in the hall. Needless to say there was not even one single trace of a living beings' presence. "Kiara! Girard!" he called for the two of them whom he left behind in the morning, one by one.

The air was warm and choking that Raven has to pull out his coat and throw it somewhere on the couch. Don't know why, but he has now only started to get that unusual feeling where he felt as if nothing was right. Indeed, it wasn't!

However, just when he crossed the passageway along the right turn to go toward his and Kiara's room that was just few steps ahead his heart beats skipped, "Ahahhaa" He halted in his tracks listening to a series of melodious baby laughs, and he knew who it belonged to while at the same time, "Come on Billy, give uncle a kiss. Come. Come." His brother Girard's voice resonating in his ears.

Shit! Now she will leave him!

Tbc...

Chapter 15...

Is it the end!

He sweated severely while the soft giggles of his baby boy echoed in the passageway. “Billy! My baby.” Raven busted into tears murmuring the same words over and over again. Was that even true or was he just hallucinating to hear his voice! Wasn’t he in the hospital admitted.

Uhh, may be he was perfectly alright as said by his brother and was back to him!

Or you can say his grandparents bought him here so that he can meet his father?

There were many questions rising in his head— some good and some bad. However, he did not even think about Kiara for a moment. He was too happy to have his baby back that he completely forgot about her. He forgot that still she was unaware to that innocent secret of his life and there are chances that she might end up separating away from him!

The time continued to pass and soon the giggles died thus giving rise to a concern in Raven’s mind. His body hardened while he blinked his tears looking at the door of his room. He wondered what made his son to go mute suddenly. “No!” having unusual thoughts homing his mind, Raven ran inside the room madly.

He widely opened the door such that it hit the wall beside making a loud thud noise. And as soon as he laid his eyes to the scene taking place inside the room, the colours of his face turned pallid. “Kiara!” Raven slipped down on his knees witnessing that she was sitting on the edge of the bed with one of Raven’s tablet watching all the old videos of Billy and him.

There was Girard sitting next to her with helpless looks pasted on his red pale face. He slightly bobbed his head with a flustered smile symbolizing that he could not do anything other than telling her the truth. Regardless, his expressions also said there was yet a lot of information to be made known to her.

Really if silence could kill anyone than by now the two of the brothers would have been dead. And the way her eyes pierced through his face, he could bet she must have already killed him infinite times in her mind.

Neither of the three uttered anything. Almost a minute later both the brothers astonishingly gazed Kiara who rose from her place. She wiped her face with the sleeve of her top while handing Girard the tablet back. Her eyes said so many things, it was clear she was mad but did not want to show it.

Raven straightened his figure watching her walk past by him outside the room. And as soon as she left, Girard stood in front of him with a vulnerable look, “Rave, stop her. She was packing her bags to leave. Don’t let her go.” He held his shoulders trying to knock some sense in his head that was occupied with too many things.

Also he wished to tell him whatever happened behind his back in the house while he was gone. Needless to say Raven had something else in mind, it seemed.

In response, Girard was pinned to the wall by his brother who howled at him like an enemy. "Why on earth did you tell her! Who the fuck told you to tell her about Billy. Wasn't that supposed to be me to tell her everything? Why Girard?" Raven pushed him on the floor in anger.

He gave no opportunity to his elder to speak. It was as though the devil was up on him controlling his moves. Raven punched him twice hence making his nose to bleed." You know I need her than why Girard! You are my brother, I thought you will help me but here you are destroying my life. I will not leave you." The saline water drops constantly effused from his eyes.

He hit anything that came in his hand. Raven reached for the artificial plant kept in the corner to smash it on his head notwithstanding, before he could get hold of it he was pushed hard by Girard from the left that made him fall on his stomach. Taking his time as he got back on his foot he punched Raven while screaming on his face, "I didn't tell her anything, but she knew it already. Go and ask her who told her! Perhaps I doubt that is you who told her everything otherwise who would do this?"

He charged him with another punch. There was tension growing between them. The two have been long forgotten their relationship and now they were fighting like streets dogs hurting and bleeding one another. If here Girard broke a show piece on Raven's shoulder than there, a flower vase was smashed on his head in turn.

The room has transformed into a dump yard. Everything lied messed on the bed and the two fought like the worst of enemies who were thirsty for each other's blood. Tackling few of his blows Girard clutched Raven's neck all set to caress it with his punch regardless, at the same moment his pupils travelled in the direction of the door and eventually he realized what was happening and let go of his younger brother.

Not only was he the one who has calmed down but also Raven. When he gazed in the way his brother was staring at, his heart beated rapidly therefore keeping down his insanity. They stared each other's face and then at the door where she stood with folded hands and sardonic countenance that gave little away.

After a minute's silence she cautiously walked in crossing the mess lying on the floor. Making sure that she was now standing in front of them face to face, Kiara flared her nose deeply looking over their wounded and bleeding faces. "Why did you stop? It was going great! You should not have broken the series of punches you were showering each other with! Come on continue!" She demandingly drawled pulling both of them close with her either hands.

They did not actuate. Their bodies did not change their postures anyway on her pulls." I said fight again damn it! Come on continue fighting." She exasperatedly finished leaving them with a jerk that hardly affected them.

Kiara insanely searched for some objects amidst the messy room. "Here, take this Raven. And hit it on his head." She found a leg of a broken chair handling him. She also came up with a rod that she placed in his brother's hand. "Now come on hit each other. Fight until you are dead!" she continued taking them off guard.

Was she crazy! Instead of separating them from the fight she was rather encouraging their anger to go on. Her voice was even kind of provoking that indeed made them gape at each other in grouchiness. However, they let objects slip down of their grips at the same time and lowered their eyes.

Although Kiara wanted to place one tight slap on their faces she still suppressed herself and only glared them with disappointment. Weren't they supposed to clear things in front her? Weren't they supposed to make her understand what was going on!

Yeah, that was different she knew it beforehand but was not it Raven's responsibility to tell the biggest truth of his life's prior to everything? Alas, here the two of them were fighting as though she was not even there. She was again made to feel avoided like the lost old times.

"I was expecting some kind of explanation from you!" She grinned trying to show how cool she was about everything. Her hands were folded against the chest, she eyed his face with hurt and inscrutable air. "But I don't think I need anymore."

With that she got hold of her bags which were kept in the corner in the room, those bags which were not even unpacked after they were brought here and walked out of the door. Raven blankly watched her go out effortlessly while there Girard grumbled standing high and dry. "Go to hell!" He vaguely pushed him following the path Kiara walked through.

Was this the end of everything!

Tbc...

Chapter 16...

Tired and defeated!

Suddenly the entire area was blanketed with white smoke. There was no object, no tile on the ground, no mess lying around but just white smoke that spread as long as one's eyes could see. Raven batted his eyes attempting to see what was all that about. He in fact he kneaded his together with force in order to rub off the hallucination, if it was any.

Albeit, it was not!

He took few steps forward roaming around in the place. There was not even any path to follow— just an empty land that ran white in the front as long as eyes could catch the glimpse of it. He slightly rubbed his hands together feeling cold.

The temperature has gone down all of a sudden. He looked around albeit to find none unless, “Dadda!” He looked everywhere, in all the four directions looking to for the source of the voice. It sounded familiar, it's chiming seemed so acquainted. “Daddaaaa” Raven was confused when the calls increased although there was no owner of the beautiful voice.

He was going to take a step ahead, assuming the calls to be just his delusion albeit, “Dadda” as soon as he faced the front to resume his walk further ahead, he got to see his baby boy standing just in front of his with a lollipop in hand.

“Ehh my baby, how come you got here?” He grinned watching his contenting and heart consoling smile. Billy's height just ended below his knees. The little jeans ending right below his cute tiny black snickers suited him well. And there was no description of the little shirt he wore. “So you are twinning with Dadda, hun!” he bent raising his hand to pull him close.

Regardless the moment Raven placed his hand on his shoulder, it went through him as if he was a picture being displayed by a projector. This hitched his breaths. Raven bit the inside of his lower lip fidgeting to register what was this all about while there his baby cutely smiled tilting head swiftly in the right making him look all the way more adorable.

This made a smile to creep on his lips notwithstanding the thought still bothered him. Raven again lifted his hand to caress his cheek and like the previous time, his hand passed through his body as though he was an image crafted by the fog. “Billy!” he whispered his name while tears homed his eyes halting against his lower lashes threatening to trickle down on his cheeks.

In turn, his little dude only smiled at least giving his confused father some courage to take this moment in a positive way.” Why can't I touch you baby! Why my hand is passing through you? Aren't you okay!” He was just a two year old kid who has so far only learned to say ‘Dadda’ ‘Mumma’ ‘Ganny’ (Granny) or ‘Gia’ (Girard), and here Raven was asking him the questions he hardly has any clue about.

Rather, “Dadda” he squealed licking his lollipop enjoying the sweet candy to its fullest.

His face was glistening in the light. Raven clucked his tongue noticing how gruesomely his fingers were wet with the candy’s stickiness. “What is this! Yuck, bad baby” He shook his head when Billy stretched his hands out bringing his father’s notice ‘a blue band’ that was placed around his wrist.

The same kind of band that is put up on a baby’s wrist when he comes to life in the hospital by the staff. “What is this around your wrist?” Raven tried to hold his hands still in his but no way possible! He noticed there was something written on the blue band. And just as he sat his eyes on the writing, his pupils grew wide in daze.

‘BILLY, THE GOD’S CHILD.’

No sooner have he read that than a force pulled him back. “Bil-Billy!” Raven struggled to stand still however it was too late. “Huh!” He blinked vigorously looking everywhere and, he was back to where he was standing earlier.

In his messy room, standing blank where just a while ago his brother and wife left him behind after a heated discussion and fight.

After running his clammy fingers in and out of his hairs he realized what was the position and where was he actually standing in life. Everything was normal, nothing similar from what he perceived except his tears. They never seemed to have soothed his eyes from streaming like a perennial river!

Raven looked around the room yet another time. “What did I do? It was just the second day of my marriage and I ruined everything! How can I be so stupid?” He caused himself having no idea what to do next.

He was as blank as anything while the forlorn air constantly hit his face. Although it was just an illusion— that foggy place, Billy, their meeting and all albeit it will not take a minute long for the fate to turn it into reality. “I need to stop her. I cannot let her go. Kiara! I need her.” He absent mindedly huffed going down the stairs. “If she won’t stay by my side then Billy, he will be taken away from me forever. No, I can’t let her go.”

There was everything in his currently bought bungalow— delighting paintings, plush comfy furniture and every other luxuries of the universe but peace. Indeed, it is true that money can buy you every fucking antique of the world but not emotions, nor happiness nor true love!

And here Raven was struggling to find some in his life by playing tricks on her. He thought she is the old Kiara who only needed his presence to be happy and contented but what he does not know was that, she has changed a lot more than he had ever anticipated.

Never mind, he buckled up his seat belt sitting in his car steadily. The engine was combusted the very next second he sat inside of the vehicle. While here he drove on the empty roads being

lighted by the side street lights than on the other hand, grabbed a handful of his phone dialling her number.

The speed was on the highest, Raven took advantage of the lonely road taking his time to get to her soonest as possible. He grumbled in both agony and frustration when the lady on the call, "The number you are calling is currently unavailable. Please try again later." Spoke burning every cell of his body.

He disconnected the call and tried again. And much to his dismay the bitch was back with her stone cold voice informing the not needed condition of her unavailability to him. "Damn it!" He threw his phone vigorously before slapping his hand on the steering wheel. "Why me?" he complained focusing on the road ahead.

Ask anybody, he was a heck of careless driver who can set any body's heart on concern and mind die with the realization that anytime they would be off from this world. He was that had with driving nonetheless, it seldom happened when he crashed his car or met with accident.

The speed was on its end, one could see it just by looking at the traces of the tyres they left behind them wherever they drove through. A perfect thick line painting the road gleamed on the wet road. "Where can I find her?" She was new to this city, he should have remembered this and stopped her when she was leaving.

She has never been to this place before. Considering her condition and delicacy, he was sure she has to be there somewhere near bus stands or for that matter on the railway stations. Because whenever they had a fight, and she wanted to go away, she would take her little bag and sit on the railways platforms to go wherever the train would take her and eventually, he would look around for her and bring her back to the hostel where he made her to stay by paying her fees.

Alas, the difference was— they were not in college any more nor was she to be predicted to go on the railways for the place was new and still Raven was doubtful as to how much has she changed over these years. So far, he learned her antics, habits and everything else about her to be the same, yet he was confused where to find her first.

He was blankly diving on the road text considering where to begin with his search. Should it be initiated from the railways or from the bus stations! Or whether he should look for her in the church. Because, church was the only place she would go after they had a fight or when he was proved out to be at fault just to pray to god and make him the kind of Raven she has wished him to be.

So many places and less time to search!

If the first place proves out to be wrong then it could lead to more distance between them. Raven let his tears falls reckless on his shirt and get absorbed into the fabric. Idiot of him that he had to have a fight with his brother at this time otherwise Girard would have helped him with his problem.

He would have gone to look for her in the other place while Raven had gone to look in some other. Unfortunately, the time was against him. The entire universe was against him actually. If it has decided to take the most out of his life than Raven was also obstinate to either snatch it back from it or destroy himself completely.

But as for now the former option seemed him wiser. After running through infinite streets and roads for hours in the same speed, tired and defeated, he found it better to visit the church. Meeting the almighty at this time won't be a bad idea. If not, he will help him but at least he would give him some peace.

So, pulling the brakes Raven let his car stand outside the gate of the church. After sucking in a deep breath he stared at the entrance agonizingly. He does not remember which was the last time he came here to meet the God but whenever it was, he was sure it must have been for a good reason unlike this.

Any which ways after shoving away the tear drops from his cheeks as Raven took a step forward, he stopped in his tracks staring at the statue of Jesus in the front with astonishment.

Tbc...

Chapter 17

Tired and defeated!

Suddenly the entire area was blanketed with white smoke. There was no object, no tile on the ground, no mess lying around but just white smoke that spread as long as one's eyes could see. Raven batted his eyes attempting to see what was all that about. He in fact he kneaded his together with force in order to rub off the hallucination, if it was any.

Albeit, it was not!

He took few steps forward roaming around in the place. There was not even any path to follow— just an empty land that ran white in the front as long as eyes could catch the glimpse of it. He slightly rubbed his hands together feeling cold.

The temperature has gone down all of a sudden. He looked around albeit to find none unless, “Dadda!” He looked everywhere, in all the four directions looking to for the source of the voice. It sounded familiar, it's chiming seemed so acquainted. “Daddaaaa” Raven was confused when the calls increased although there was no owner of the beautiful voice.

He was going to take a step ahead, assuming the calls to be just his delusion albeit, “Dadda” as soon as he faced the front to resume his walk further ahead, he got to see his baby boy standing just in front of his with a lollipop in hand.

“Ehh my baby, how come you got here?” He grinned watching his contenting and heart consoling smile. Billy's height just ended below his knees. The little jeans ending right below his cute tiny black snickers suited him well. And there was no description of the little shirt he wore. “So you are twinning with Dadda, hun!” he bent raising his hand to pull him close.

Regardless the moment Raven placed his hand on his shoulder, it went through him as if he was a picture being displayed by a projector. This hitched his breaths. Raven bit the inside of his lower lip fidgeting to register what was this all about while there his baby cutely smiled tilting head swiftly in the right making him look all the way more adorable.

This made a smile to creep on his lips notwithstanding the thought still bothered him. Raven again lifted his hand to caress his cheek and like the previous time, his hand passed through his body as though he was an image crafted by the fog. “Billy!” he whispered his name while tears homed his eyes halting against his lower lashes threatening to trickle down on his cheeks.

In turn, his little dude only smiled at least giving his confused father some courage to take this moment in a positive way.” Why can't I touch you baby! Why my hand is passing through you? Aren't you okay!” He was just a two year old kid who has so far only learned to say ‘Dadda’ ‘Mumma’ ‘Ganny’ (Granny) or ‘Gia’ (Girard), and here Raven was asking him the questions he hardly has any clue about.

Rather, “Dadda” he squealed licking his lollipop enjoying the sweet candy to its fullest.

His face was glistening in the light. Raven clucked his tongue noticing how gruesomely his fingers were wet with the candy’s stickiness. “What is this! Yuck, bad baby” He shook his head when Billy stretched his hands out bringing his father’s notice ‘a blue band’ that was placed around his wrist.

The same kind of band that is put up on a baby’s wrist when he comes to life in the hospital by the staff. “What is this around your wrist?” Raven tried to hold his hands still in his but no way possible! He noticed there was something written on the blue band. And just as he sat his eyes on the writing, his pupils grew wide in daze.

‘BILLY, THE GOD’S CHILD.’

No sooner have he read that than a force pulled him back. “Bil-Billy!” Raven struggled to stand still however it was too late. “Huh!” He blinked vigorously looking everywhere and, he was back to where he was standing earlier.

In his messy room, standing blank where just a while ago his brother and wife left him behind after a heated discussion and fight.

After running his clammy fingers in and out of his hairs he realized what was the position and where was he actually standing in life. Everything was normal, nothing similar from what he perceived except his tears. They never seemed to have soothed his eyes from streaming like a perennial river!

Raven looked around the room yet another time. “What did I do? It was just the second day of my marriage and I ruined everything! How can I be so stupid?” He caused himself having no idea what to do next.

He was as blank as anything while the forlorn air constantly hit his face. Although it was just an illusion— that foggy place, Billy, their meeting and all albeit it will not take a minute long for the fate to turn it into reality. “I need to stop her. I cannot let her go. Kiara! I need her.” He absent mindedly huffed going down the stairs. “If she won’t stay by my side then Billy, he will be taken away from me forever. No, I can’t let her go.”

There was everything in his currently bought bungalow— delighting paintings, plush comfy furniture and every other luxuries of the universe but peace. Indeed, it is true that money can buy you every fucking antique of the world but not emotions, nor happiness nor true love!

And here Raven was struggling to find some in his life by playing tricks on her. He thought she is the old Kiara who only needed his presence to be happy and contented but what he does not know was that, she has changed a lot more than he had ever anticipated.

Never mind, he buckled up his seat belt sitting in his car steadily. The engine was combusted the very next second he sat inside of the vehicle. While here he drove on the empty roads being

lighted by the side street lights than on the other hand, grabbed a handful of his phone dialling her number.

The speed was on the highest, Raven took advantage of the lonely road taking his time to get to her soonest as possible. He grumbled in both agony and frustration when the lady on the call, "The number you are calling is currently unavailable. Please try again later." Spoke burning every cell of his body.

He disconnected the call and tried again. And much to his dismay the bitch was back with her stone cold voice informing the not needed condition of her unavailability to him. "Damn it!" He threw his phone vigorously before slapping his hand on the steering wheel. "Why me?" he complained focusing on the road ahead.

Ask anybody, he was a heck of careless driver who can set any body's heart on concern and mind die with the realization that anytime they would be off from this world. He was that had with driving nonetheless, it seldom happened when he crashed his car or met with accident.

The speed was on its end, one could see it just by looking at the traces of the tyres they left behind them wherever they drove through. A perfect thick line painting the road gleamed on the wet road. "Where can I find her?" She was new to this city, he should have remembered this and stopped her when she was leaving.

She has never been to this place before. Considering her condition and delicacy, he was sure she has to be there somewhere near bus stands or for that matter on the railway stations. Because whenever they had a fight, and she wanted to go away, she would take her little bag and sit on the railways platforms to go wherever the train would take her and eventually, he would look around for her and bring her back to the hostel where he made her to stay by paying her fees.

Alas, the difference was— they were not in college any more nor was she to be predicted to go on the railways for the place was new and still Raven was doubtful as to how much has she changed over these years. So far, he learned her antics, habits and everything else about her to be the same, yet he was confused where to find her first.

He was blankly diving on the road text considering where to begin with his search. Should it be initiated from the railways or from the bus stations! Or whether he should look for her in the church. Because, church was the only place she would go after they had a fight or when he was proved out to be at fault just to pray to god and make him the kind of Raven she has wished him to be.

So many places and less time to search!

If the first place proves out to be wrong then it could lead to more distance between them. Raven let his tears falls reckless on his shirt and get absorbed into the fabric. Idiot of him that he had to have a fight with his brother at this time otherwise Girard would have helped him with his problem.

He would have gone to look for her in the other place while Raven had gone to look in some other. Unfortunately, the time was against him. The entire universe was against him actually. If it has decided to take the most out of his life than Raven was also obstinate to either snatch it back from it or destroy himself completely.

But as for now the former option seemed him wiser. After running through infinite streets and roads for hours in the same speed, tired and defeated, he found it better to visit the church. Meeting the almighty at this time won't be a bad idea. If not, he will help him but at least he would give him some peace.

So, pulling the brakes Raven let his car stand outside the gate of the church. After sucking in a deep breath he stared at the entrance agonizingly. He does not remember which was the last time he came here to meet the God but whenever it was, he was sure it must have been for a good reason unlike this.

Any which ways after shoving away the tear drops from his cheeks as Raven took a step forward, he stopped in his tracks staring at the statue of Jesus in the front with astonishment.

Tbc...

Chapter 18. I wanna go...

Raven's point of view...

I was stunned. My breaths ceased as my eyes focused in the front. Was that true? Or was I just seeing things out of nowhere. I rubbed my eyes to check whether it was like the past time, my delusion. I was tired of the drive, my eyes were paining. May be I was just viewing this all like I did few hours ago for Billy.

"Yeah, and you know what he is just crazy. Mark my words he will keep Raven on the edge, he is one heck of a stubborn son. You can say replica of his father but cuter and more stubborn than him!" Girard was sitting on the bench in the first row with Kiara.

They were talking. I really can't see whether the talk was firm or happening out of the heat of the moment but it was them only. "He is really cute. Does he look the same in real? Just look at him he looks like a doll." She said. Her voice was normal and playful.

It was different. I could still sense hurt and heaviness. This was not new, I know this. I have experience of years. Whenever she would be sad and would want to make her mind drift away from something that has caused her problems, she would chime and smile amidst her tears. And the same, I could sense now.

I slowly walked in removing my shoes in the side. Their backs were facing me. They have not yet sensed another presence in there otherwise surely, they would have exited at once seeing my face. Why won't they! I have caused so many problems. I had a fight with my brother who has been helping me with no rest. I hurt her who after forgetting everything decided to marry me.

Now I doubt it too as to why did she agree to be with me when she knew I am now a father of a two years old kid and a divorcee with bad memories of an unsuccessful marriage. She should have slapped me and shut the door on my face right then when I directly stood on her doorstep.

I did not call her too. It was like the other night I and Girard had a talk about ... about Billy's custody and how his whore grandparents (mom's parents) were plotting against me to get him. And then after a night's thinking Girard comes up with a mind blowing idea which he shares with us on the breakfast table and makes me remember about that girlfriend of mine who I left for a girl who was now the mother of my poor child and my ex wife. And the woman against which I wanted to use her too.

I felt pathetic but in the end I lose to my heart that was craving for his blood. His child. My fatherly emotions wanted to caress and feel the bond and relationship that I never got a chance to cherish in life. Two years passed in a blink just fighting and fighting with his mother and

parents and now, that I failed to notice how big my son has grown. He can speak, throw tantrums, make a call by looking at the pictures in the phone and talk.

I was lost recalling all those wonderful times. My vision was blur with hot tears that I failed to see the bench in my front and bumped into it. I did not fall but it definitely made such noise that made the two sitting in front to look behind. At the sudden blow the tears were taken care by the gravity, and they fell down clearing my view.

I could see the awkwardness on their faces. My very gaze fell on her. She stared me for a second and turned her head to look at the altar in the front. It hit me through my heart. It was her ignorance! Anyway as I straightened myself with a deep sigh I concentrated on Girard's damaged face.

There was blood dried up in the corner of his lips. A bump on his forehead and uncountable scratches on his face as well as neck. It made me look down on my feet in shame. I misunderstood him, raised my hands on him, yet he was sitting there with her who is more important to me than oxygen.

He was sitting with her obviously trying to explain everything. Despite of my bad behaviour he was there with her thinking only and only about me and my future. My future with Billy and her. I tried to divert my eyes somewhere else realizing that he too turned his gaze away from me clearly ignoring my presence.

The two of them sat silent while I continued to stand like a dumb fuck there with no idea what to do next. They did not seem to be interested at all in talking with me. I did such work that I was to be rewarded with such kind of behaviour from their part.

They must be waiting for me to make a move but who would tell them I did not have the courage to even match my eyes with them, let alone taking the initiative and talking about it. How can you assume a person who has done so many wrong things in life to make a move and talk! It was itself shameful to even consider that.

Regardless, again Girard took a step forward by whispering something in his ear. He gave her a side hug before getting up from his place and moved out of the exit ignoring me. He pretended as though I was not present there only.

A minute passed to Girard's leave and I still stood unbudged from the spot. Even she neither did move nor did crane her neck in the back and see me. Again we were stuck in the dilemma of making first move. However, it was now my turn. She was not answerable to me, but I was to her.

It was my concern to clear up everything. Girard has done the half work, he has not only did find her but also helped me to take this opportunity and clear everything between. 'Rave it is difficult but not impossible. She will whine but she will understand. Tell her everything, ask for her forgiveness, mend all the issues between you two and get freedom from this burden. '

I motivated myself while taking slow steps toward her. Her back erected sensing my slow moves moving toward her. The way she twitched her shoulder I knew she was uncomfortable for she knew she was going to be aware of some of the worst phase of my life and about Billy's existence too.

"Uhh!" I sat next to her leaving some space between us. She curled her fingers into fists whilst digging them in between her thighs trying to control herself. She was one of those shy girls who found every moment nervousing.

"Kia—" Just as I opened my mouth to speak she immediately rose from her place trying to go away.

I quickly grabbed her wrist not letting her go. "I have my train in next few hours Raven let me go! I don't want to be late." My mind went numb listening her words.

She really wants to leave me!

No I will not let this happen not at least before telling her the entire truth!

Tbc..

Chapter 19. Revelation...

Author's point of view...

Late in the night that was howling with the chirping of night insects,

Surrounded with huge long trees and a graveyard in the north, the church glistened with the lights of the ceiling and the candles. It was peaceful, anybody could meet their satisfaction. Indeed, a church is a place that is not only the house of the God but also a shelter for all those lost people who are looking for a way to go on in life.

Something of the same kind was happening with Raven. He has lost his path, although it was right across his eyes just the thing was that— obstacles were too many and time too less. And after being not able to go for the path he chose he came up to the God's house to look for some signs, some help from the almighty and see, not even few hours have gone by, and he found what he was looking for.

Kiara.

She softly muffled lowering her head. Her wrist was still under his solid grip. It was obvious there was no way she could struggle, fight, try to shove him away in any way for he was strong and as they say 'A man with a broken heart is more powerful than a pride of lions' henceforth it was useless to counter, and so she kept rooted in her place unmoved.

Sporadically she cleansed off her tears unable to suppress her emotions. "After I broke up with her and left the college, I moved in with Shania. In two months of dating, I was sure she was the girl I was looking for. We've become a good couple. We would hang out together, go on dates and frequently go on dinners with each other's families. She has become my ideal attraction." The lump in her throat irritated her.

Only she knows what the time has been and how ungrateful the world seemed after he left her. And having him describe the undescribable pleasure he had with her, every cell of her body ached. It was as if he was not actually narrating why have he become like this but actually sprinkling salt on her old paining wounds.

"We were liked by everyone and after we finished the first half of the year in university, I proposed her." He smiled serenely while gazing her pallid face from the corner of his eyes.

It was not hidden as to what was her condition while he was gone, His friends who stayed in the same city as hers over that time would frequently talk about her every time they had a conversation. But the fact that when she was suffering there and here he was enjoying his life with somebody else was something he felt bad for.

Ohh that he had realized this three years ago then surely they would have been together and Billy, he would have been their happy kid.

“Mom, dad and Girard were against my relationship with her. They claimed they have seen something much more in her which I have failed to notice. They claimed I was blindfolded by her love that I could not see how insane she was. They said she was lunatic! “ She stuck her lashes together not wanting to listen it.

Was she mad when she had once told him that ‘Raven, Shania is not what she pretends herself to be. There is something which we can’t see!’ at the time when once they were sitting in the college canteen eating their favourite momos stuffed with mozzarella cheese and flavoured capsicum and cabbage mixture. However, like every time, he preferred to ignore her.

Definitely, his parents must have seen something too!

“After the first semester examinations were done, we realized we can’t stay away any more from one another and thus decided to get married.” The more further he revealed the difficult it became for her to breathe! She had freaking imagined to have practised everything he just mentioned!

She wanted to go on dates, family dinners with him. She desired to have him propose her in a filmy style by sitting on his knees and pulling out a ring box to her. She had wished to stand in the white wedding gown with him and stand on the altar in front of the priest while he’d read out all the vows to them. But no, fate had other plans. Or say, he had other plans, why blaming their fate?

“Girard tried to give me some piece of his mind. He warned me to think about the marriage one more time, it was about my life but (sardonic laugh) I was too mad to wait.” Very slowly the grip around her skin began to go firm, yet he made sure to not leave her hand. He could not trust her, he had way too many things to put forth before she could make her mind up for any decision.

Her muscles were all tensed, she was sitting on the verge of the bench. All she waited was for a chance to have him loosen the grip on her hand so that she could escape. She does not want to hear that at all. Right within the sixth months of their break up, he was in the church getting married while back here, she was passing her days crying bitterly and nights with insomnia engulfing her.

She had had hungry weeks of no food, eating nothing but few pieces of bread for breakfast, lunch and supper to keep living every fucking day. She had nothing, no money, no strength to work, certainly nothing for a year.

She had to borrow money from the owner of her apartment who helped her as long as he didn’t know that she has broken up with Raven but when she failed to make payments, he kicked her off from his apartment for the guy who would pay her bills and provide for her meals was no more her companion. It was Raven who had found her shelter. Somebody who had let her stay only because she was the girlfriend of a rich guy.

Yes he was heartless to ditch her, but he did something that was not pleasant though at least something you can expect from a spoilt bastard son of a rich father— he left a big sum in her back account. Some lakhs of dollars as compensation. Some help because he knew it will be difficult for her to find a job so soon so till that time, it could be helpful.

Needless to say, she was orphan, Yes; but not a beggar!

Kiara never touched the money he left her but preferred to die out of hunger for a year until she found herself a pleasing job of a waitress at a small club till she finished with her studies and when they were done, she got a good employment yet not a big hit to make a healthy living.

Anyway, recalling the last again made her eyes to bleed with tears. Kiara now let them recklessly smack down on her lap wetting her trousers. She need not tell him anything coz he does not deserve it, but he ought to tell everything for she was his wife. That wife, who she desired to become just for a reason.

And the reason is yet to be unveiled!

“We shifted here in this bungalow only. Where we live now.” It was a shock again! “I debited my two years salary in advance from my father’s company and bought this for us. It was an ideal abode that I bought for me and my family. I was determined, I would make the best of memories in this house with my wife, my family.”

Damn it! She passed two days of her married life in their bungalow! That bungalow which he bought from his advance salary for his wife and his family. Now Kiara began to get a feeling of being a trespasser! She trespassed in an abode that was supposedly made for somebody else, but she lived there.

“And unexpected as it was, after some two months she announced She was pregnant with my baby.” He said, her nails dug in her palm soon as he finished it off. She does not have no more strength to listen to this shit further until his next statement left him stunned, “But you know what Kiara, as it is globally believed that ‘Karma is a bitch!’ and you get what you have done back— guess what, I was slapped by my karma. (pause) May be because of what I did to you!” He smiled finally looking in her eyes, giving her goosebumps.

She gulped the lump in her gullet locking her pupils with his moist ones. Why would he say that!

Tbc...

Chapter 20. His daughter...

Third person's (Author) point of view...

The night grew fascinating and windy. Their hairs flew along with the rhythm of winds. Raven smiled chastely when Kiara's hair strands brushed over on his cheek caressing it. Uhh, it had been better if that has been her soft palm instead! He so much yearns for her to embrace him in her arms.

It was irritating in the past yet as they say 'with growing gap and dying emotions' after some years you crave for those feelings to be felt again. And now, he yearned to feel those moments again. In fact, she desired the same. She wanted to feel him close, have him kiss her like a maniac that he was as her lover playing stupid pranks and being her partner in all the naughty crimes she committed in the college.

Two heart— yearning for the same feeling sat silent with the only thought that the other one of them would not want it! They sighed lightly. Time is really cruel, it makes a person see umpteenth situations at the same time, especially when they are already surrounded with obstacles.

Kiara waited for him to continue his narration. It has been a good five minutes that he stayed mum. His eyes were just on the altar in the front while he was lost in his dilemmas. "Everything was going good. We both were happy with the news but not my parents. They said it was too early to be parents when we have not even finished with our studies. Two years were still left, and they wished to see us complete our degrees and think about family later. But we did not want to kill the baby. It was our flesh. We made it. And anyway after a month, my parents agreed to it. But you know, after she crossed six months of pregnancy she started behaving different." Kiara scrunched her brows in suspect. Why would she do that!

She gulped in some air preparing herself to listen the further narration and there, Raven did not divert his eyes from the altar. "We shifted to my parent's abode until her pregnancy as I was also helping dad and Girard in the business. I had planned to join in right after pursuing all the degrees. And it was any normal night when I returned home from the office with my father and what I saw stunned us both.

Shania was drinking in the hall with ashes of cigarettes scattered on the table in the hall. While I went to see her Dad went to look for mom as to how could she not stop her from drinking. But you know, he found mom tied with ropes in a chair and her mouth stuffed with a cloth. She was locked in the bathroom and marks of beatings of her hands and face. "So far whatever she listened, this was the worst revelation. Kiara refused to believe on it.

"When I asked her what happened, she said that my mom screamed her since she was sleeping her on belly, so she did that! "He laughed not believing that he will have to narrate that phase.

She was aware Shania was crazy, something was wrong with her but then having her do such a job was out of her control. When she saw him grip his phone tight she knew something else was on the way that was too far unbelievable.

“We did not talk about it. Dad refused to talk to me since they’ve warned me beforehand about Shania and her strangeness. Even I was not ready to believe she did that but you know somewhere I knew there was something I failed to see. So the next day, I took her to a doctor. She was pregnant with my kid in her womb, obviously as father I didn’t want her to risk her as well as my babies life. “ There was a strange smile on his face.” We were going to have twins! “

That was not expected. Kiara gasped staring him astonishingly. She feared what else does he have in his stock to reveal more! Also, she wondered if there were twins in her belly then why does Raven only wants to save Billy, what about the other kid!

So many revelations as many doubts. Her head began to spin, and so she decided to hear it from his mouth only.

“ The doctor is our good family friend and dad’s partner in business. After a week’s tests and examinations, it was revealed that Shania was mentally not stable. In fact that was a dangerous past behind her innocence. The doctor revealed her medical history that showed that, she has once killed a pizza delivery boy because he delivered pizza ten minutes late when the actual time they stated in their advertisements was five minutes.

There were many other cases where she was held victim in her childhood for committing crimes like stabbing a next door old lady, for killing the buildings pets and collecting their dead bodies in her closet, collecting hair strands of her classmates and many more. She was also accused. For slitting off the building’s watchman’s neck with a pencil sharpener’s blade just because he asked her not to play during night time. “

Well it would be an understatement to say that she was shocked. Because what she seemed to be right now was more than having a shock. Her eyes were out of their frames. She was breathing heavily with a pale face. You can say it was her good luck that Shania was not there otherwise she was definitely have screamed her heart out just by seeing her face.

Raven himself was intrigued to see her expressions. But it was not a story. Whatever he narrated till now was not any story written by Chantinglove, it true as fuck. In fact, he reckoned as to how will she react listening to the further narration he has got to make!

“Any ways, so after I learned her past and medical history I went to meet her parents. And you know what, they just added to my misery. They told me, she was sent to rehab and now she was all okay. And now whatever she does it is just for fun. As much crazy as Shania is, her parents more more crazier than her. I would say, it was them who influenced her to continue with that shit. “ There was now a rising temper in his voice. Occurred like he was on the edge of finishing his revelation.

“ After Shania learned that we know her past and everything, she did more of stuff. She often drank, smoked, took drugs and ate food that was dangerous for her and the kids. And every time we tried to explain her she threatened us to kill her babies. This went on until she delivered the babies. And rest you can see now. I immediately filed for divorce and decided to keep the kids with me. And ever since then, this is the situation. “ He finished off however, now it was the turn of explaining the reason behind the marriage with her and other things.

“ Although we are divorced, it is still not decided who will have Billy’s custody. The court strictly said we (the mother of the father) can’t impose our right on him unless it is decided who Billy can stay with. In their eyes, we both are criminals. She because she tried to kill my babies and I because of bribing the doctors and asking them to say that they were born dead. But I only did that for their safety, still the court held me wrong. “ There was heaviness in his tone. He merely breathed, his eyes streaming with hot tears.”

Shania and her family are taking every possible step to take him away from me. But I won’t let them do that. And Kiara, that why I married you. “ He swiftly shove away his tears turning to face her.

Kiara suppressed the urge of pulling him close and soothe him. He was still her criminal. He tricked her. “It was Girard’s idea. Our lawyer told that only if I want to get Billy’s custody I need to get married to a woman who can be a good mother and who can assure the court that she can take his responsibility. After that meeting with the lawyer, Girard suggested me your name. He said only you can be my Billy’s responsible mother because you have been my girlfriend and almost everybody knows our relation. Court will be satisfied to know you can take his care better than his real mother and me. “ He kind of begged. Raven let the tears slid on his cheeks and stain his shirt.

It would be unethical to beg her to stay for him but at least he can convince her to stay for Billy if not for him. Needless to say what she did was more than astonishing. She turned her back to him clearly conveying her message. She was not yet satisfied. “I shall leave. It’s time to go.” Kiara announced getting up from the seat, he did not make any attempt to stop her. It was all over!

After reaching for her baggage and turning for the exit, Kiara stopped in her mid walk watching him who blankly stared in the front with no move. “ Before I leave I just want to ask one thing.” He cranes his neck in her way at the mere mention, may be there still some hope left.

They shared an eye lock, eye lock that depicted their emotions. She was struggling hard to not melt and fall for him and sympathize him whereas he simply stared her waiting for her to shoot her question. “You said twins. Shania was pregnant with twins. (pause) Then why are you only fighting for Billy’s custody. What about the other kid?”

No sooner did she say that than Raven let out a sardonic chuckle while stating amidst teary eyes. "Because She was drowned in the bath tub by her mother. Kiara is no more alive"

Her clutch around the handle of the bag loosened at the disclosure of his daughter's dead. He named his daughter after her!

Tbc...

Chapter 21. As much as he needs me, I need him...

Kiara's point of view...

My breaths were stuck in my throat. I wished to breathe and keep standing to the going on situation, yet I couldn't. His words left me speechless. I froze in my spot and eventually the air around me began to get heavier and burn my skin with increasing chills.

I was sure by now my skin would have gone crimson under the decreasing temperature. Anyhow as I moved my head to see him with great difficulty, my heart ached reading his features. He sat like that participant of the competition who lost the match few seconds right before reaching the finish line.

"Wh-at!" my voice cracked at the unexpected disclosure.

So much pain! So much hurt! So much guilt!

I never thought Raven was living such a difficult life. Look at him, he was young and handsome. He has not even started to enjoy his adult life as an individual and he was already trapped by obstacles and so many problems. He became an unfortunate father of two kids; one of them lost her life at a bad interval while the other was fighting with death because of his mother's false practises during pregnancy.

He was crying whilst recalling that bad past but right now, ever since he told me about his little daughter Kiara, he has his lips curved into a smile that never faded away. "Hmmm. You got me right, I lost my Kiara. But I really don't regret it and you know why?" he gaped over my face. "Because I had lost my Kiara three years ago. The one I lost a year ago was just a little angel I named after her whom I left behind for someone who does not even deserve to be with me.

But I miss her. I wish if she could come back to me. I am ready to do anything for her. Even ready to take her painful punishments but all I need is her. Only her. I need her. " That was the end of his speech.

After that he neither smiled nor looked back me.

He indirectly conveyed his message to me.

Having palmed his face he let his heart cry leaving me on my own. He let me be not even caring to stand up and stop me from leaving. He accepted it that way. However, the point was did I really want to leave him! Did I really want to give him the biggest punishment of his life by going away and letting him stay here and see his only child getting either snatched away or brutally killed by his mother like his other child. And most importantly, did I really want to go

back to that apartment of mine where I stayed more like a burden on the land and living just for nothing!

I was in dilemma! If part of my heart said to go and let him be here and cry then the other part of the same heart begged me to stop and take him back. He was wrong, no doubts but at this point of time he needed me just the way I needed him three years ago. Regardless, the indifference was that he left me shoving away the thoughts how much I really cared about him and right now, recalling all those moments, I really felt like leaving him too.

But then, what will be the difference between him and me?

He left me, yes. And if I do the same then I will be as much criminal as him in the eyes of Billy. Surely, Raven no more deserves my sympathy but that little kid deserves me. If not for Raven, then at least for his son I need to stay back. Only for Billy. Only and only for Billy.

“Raven!”

Filling in a good amount of oxygen in my lungs when I turned around, I noticed the seat was empty, and he was now sitting in front of the lord on his knees. I wiped off my tears taking small steps toward him.

Hugging him from behind I wrapped my arms around his shoulders for my own support. As much as he needs me I need him too. We are unfortunately sailing in the same boat. “I am sorry for your loss. I am sorry that you have to recall that past again.” I cried tilting near his ears. My lips harshly brushing against his ear lobe.

Seeing him like that hurts me more than himself. He was everything to me. His happiness mattered to me the most. I changed myself for him and now look at him, he has totally changed. A strong wave of emotions passed within my veins. Loving him was the only thing I knew, perhaps he had other decisions made when it was actually supposed to be us TOGETHER.

May be that is what you call life... A life that shows you all the events. Good, bad, worse, worst and even extremely hurting? But then, it is better to realize your mistake rather than staying in guilt and destroying your life. And a true love is that where both the partners feel the worst of emotions by making wrong decisions before coming together.

May be this was our test taken by our destiny?

In fact, I can't hold Raven wrong alone. I was wrong too. Yes. If I really loved him, I should have stopped him from leaving. That day before leaving the country with Shania, he had come to see me. Apologize for one last time but I did not open the door. If I had really cared about our future, my happiness, my emotions then I would have taken every possible step to not let him go away.

We both are equally responsible for all this. We both are to be accused of everything that happened within these years. He should not be blamed alone. “Why did you not stop me that

day?" My heart thumped. I stopped crying and stared him from the corner of my eyes. He raised the same topic I was thinking about.

Tbc...

Chapter 22. His strength...

He placed his hands over mine which were gripping against his hard chest firmly. His skin was burning, it was hot. "Only if you had opened the door that day, shoved few slaps on my face and threatened me to do something to yourself, I should have changed my mind." He mewed holding on to me tight.

He was not wrong, providing that if I had tried— TRIED then we could have been together. I knew it right after the moment I met him for the first time, he was moody and a vague decision maker. He often made unprofessional decisions ruining his projects that could have been a big hit. "You know throughout the journey to the airport I wished to see you. Hug you. I know I was wrong but it won't be wrong either to say that you didn't made any efforts to save our relationship. If I was bent on ending us, drawing us apart then you too let me do it. You knew, I was attracted to her yet you kept mum just because you thought it will change me up. Why didn't you change me like the other people around you?" Only I have answers to his questions. "Things could have been different and lot better then."

I know I didn't do anything. We are equally to be accused for our loss. But not any more. What has been, has been. It is not too late now. We have enough time to mend everything. Correct, mending won't take us back to the past where we separated still it will do real good to the lives we have been living till now.

"Shhh! I am sorry. I should have done something but Raven it's not too late yet. We still have a chance. And I am sure this time we'll do a lot better together. I promise, I will mend everything. I will change everything to normal like it was earlier. And Billy—" My voice cracked talking about him for no matter how well I try to get over everything and give ourselves a chance, the reality won't change that he has a kid from some other woman. That woman who destroyed my happy life. "We will give Billy a good life." After gulping the knot down my dry throat I said.

His muscles relaxed under my touch. He was recovering slowly. The redness has slightly reduced from his face, and he was appearing good again. His fair complexion gives me a hard time. When he is angry or emotionally depressed, his skin turns red. "Promise!" I wish to kiss that pout. And the way he asked like a child to his mother, it took away my breaths. I could see the cuteness I have fallen for returning on his face.

With a confident nod I pulled him closer to hug him tight, he pulled me in the front taking me in his arms while going on his back on the floor. "I love you." I hear him whisper alongside my jaw as I was resting my head in the crook of his neck feeling him. "I am sorry for everything. I know it is hard to forget everything and move on. I am so sorr—" Just like he did to me on our wedding day, I sealed his lips with mine eventually killing the further words in his mouth before he could deliver them.

No more sorries, and love yous. Now, it will be just us!

Third person's point of view...

"I am sorry, I should not have raised my hands on you." Standing like a culprit kid, Raven asked for pardon from his elder brother who seemed to give no damn to his words.

With a bandaged forehead and scarred cheek, Girard dug his eyes more in the screen of his phone gradually avoiding to pay any attention to his brother, who took him wrong for everything and punished him for nothing!

"You know it took me a great time to execute everything and go back to Kiara. It was difficult to even agree to do that. Then how can you not expect me to react?" Raven went on his knees in front of his disappointed brother who pretended to be playing Pubg whilst sitting on the single sofa.

The lines of anxiety were coming back on his forehead. Raven did not sleep the remaining night after settling his issues with Kiara. Preferably, he was more into sleeping on her chest feeling her close in their room. He was too happy to sleep. Finally, he will be able to see his son and deal with his ex wife's parents and their lawyers.

"You know I lose my calm when it comes to Billy. You are aware of it, aren't you? Now come on, don't be too hard on me. You know your brother, don't you." He said snatching away his phone. He smiled his best to melt this rough and tough brother of his.

However, it was not enough. Girard was on his legs going out of the room. Raven looked in his left at his wife, who shrugged her shoulders with the looks 'Go, bring him back. It's your fault' gesturing him to go out with her hands. She literally pulled him by the collars forcing him to go behind Girard.

It is not easy to pacify him. Not at least when he is accused and beaten up for misunderstandings. "Gir!" Raven clutched his forearm stopping him in his tracks. He licked the corner of his lips gazing at his face, he seemed dangerous. A perfect bully that he was in the college. No denials, Raven himself was scared of him because he was bothered along with Kiara in the college, if by chance he ever tried to defend his girlfriend.

"I am sorry." Having stated this Raven breathed deeply intently looking in his brother's eyes.

There was guilt, pain and obviously the acceptance for doing wrong. After shoving a hard punch in Raven's face, Girard pulled him in a hug. "Don't think you can do this always. Try me next time and you're dead!" He warned rubbing his back.

He can't help it. Even he can't stay angry on him for too long. Whatever he has seen in these years, it was obvious on his part to take such step and overreact! Notwithstanding, his strength (Kiara) has come back to him. Now he can fight any problem with no hesitation. He has got his confidence, his motivation back.

Tbc...

Chapter 23. Billy's back home...

A week later, There was nervousness on Raven's face. He bit his nails whilst sitting on the chair outside the ward impatiently. "Girard! What do you think, how will she react?" he anxiously asked his brother longingly gaping over in his direction.

Girard smiled, the same kind of smile he gave him during their journey till here, to the hospital. "You are over thinking brother. There's no reason in you getting so nervous now. She knows everything right! She has been here the entire week with mom, why are you bothering yourself uselessly! " Squeezing his shoulder Girard gave him a side hug.

They actually have come to the hospital to see Billy. He was going to be discharged today. The doctors were shocked and considered it more like a miracle seeing his recovery after Kiara came to see him the next day of that night and that chaos. He was weak and hardly opened his eyes.

However, as she kept coming and seeing him, he got a lot better and today, he was going to be freed from this stupid hospital. "You are right but will she accept Billy like her own child?" There was nothing else Girard could do than give out a defeated sigh and murderous glance to him.

There is no counting as to how many times he must have said that! Sure thing but, "Do you like to eat food. Yes Billy! Do you like to eat food?" There came she looking as usually beautiful. The black Turtle neck T-shirt fitted her well with the short pants. Regardless the thing that suited her more was the way how she held Billy close to her chest.

She had him dolled up in a plain soft baby azure blanket from top to head while she supported his back by keeping one of her hand around and the other under his buttocks making him sit properly in her hold. Although he still appeared to be weak that he could hardly pull his lips apart and speak.

He constantly stared her face trying to comprehend who this woman could be. Billy had his fingers curled around the cloth of her tee near the collar bone as she strode ahead with him, protectively. "We will buy you yumyyyyyy sandwiches, alright." He blinked his eyes watching her cute smile smiling himself too.

Only if he could speak then obviously the word that would have spilled out of his mouth have been, 'Mummy' because in the manner his eager eyes noticed her fair face that was as innocent as his, it could only be his mother who can talk to him so nicely and love him so much.

As she neared the two brothers who were watching her intriguingly, she smiled. It was surely unanticipated but she will have to say that this was the bestest gift her husband could get her. He was not her baby, but a cute lovely doll who frequently smiled seeing her smiles and blinked his eyes whenever she said something, as in agreement.

“Do you want to go to your daddy?” Kiara questioned the bundle of cuteness that was blanketed in a way more adorable blanket that could make anyone stop by and place innumerable kisses on his cute round face.

Obviously from what Billy’s expressions could tell, he seldom understood what was she saying until he saw the way she was pointing at. He calmly glowered his dark round retina on her finger then at the person it was pointing at, and as soon as he realized it he hurriedly hid himself in her embrace.

Kiara chuckled over his cuteness, so did Raven. So, Billy too likes to be pampered with attention and sweet talks like his father.

Like father like son.

There was an unexplainable grin adoring their faces. And definitely a beautiful sight to watch. Billy, who was as weak as a kitten, who cannot even breathe without oxygen mask was exerting his full energy to not go to his father. He liked his new friend cum his new mummy.

“Typical Raven junior!” Girard remarked only to get a playful hit on his shoulder from his beloved younger brother.

It was an eye soothing sight. Raven took a step forward to kiss Billy. Though he was restricted by the court, yet he didn’t care. The guards stood metres away witnessing everything, yet they didn’t utter a word at all. Uhh may be they understood now, how it feels to be kept away from their kids! Or you can say, they were openly allowing him to meet his son when he was not supposed to!

Anyway, Billy hesitantly pulled out his hand from the blanket and brushed it on his father’s stubbled cheek. He kept embracing Kiara more and more hiding in her throat while he trailed his little palm over his father’s face. “Daddy loves you soo much.” Raven stated kissing all over his hand lovingly.

Not even in his entire life during these three years would he have got this opportunity to see his kid up close. All thanks to this woman standing across him holding his recently discharged son. He can’t thank her enough. She has made that thing possible which no one else could do. She got him his son back.

From afar, his parents Mr. And Mrs. Carter admired this adorable pair with moist eyes. “I always knew it, this girl can handle our scumbag Raven. Just look at them Hardin, they look soo good together. I so love this family.” Mrs. Carter cried hugging her husband’s arms affectionately.

They suffered along with their son, perhaps a little more than Raven. They had to survive watching their son face so many hardships and then their grandchild. They experienced bad traumas and indefinite disputes too. “You are right. And Just give a close look to Billy. He looks soo cute in her arms. Like her own flesh. Just look how is he lingering on her skin. Aww, so

adorable. He seems more lively than ever.” Mr. Carter idolized their little prince who was returning home with them after fighting one of the battles in the hospital.

After some more adorable time, the Carter family finally stepped out of the hospital. While settling in their respective cars Raven halted from helping Kiara sit inside his Audi and gazed back at the building in his back. This place has given him unnecessary pain and head ache.

He can’t even say how many times have he stepped in here. There is no description to the emotions he felt here. This was the place where his little warrior came to the world and the only place he comes frequently to fight against his death. “Hey, what happened?” peeping out of the opened door Kiara looked up at his face patting Billy’s back. He was injected with some immunogen medication and so was sleeping soundly.

Girard as well as their parents had left. It was only the three of them still waiting to leave this place. “I have seen many things here, Kiara. I can’t even tell what they are.” She heard him say. This did not make her feel strange or otherwise, rather she smiled holding his wrist and asking him to sit in the seat next to her.

She actioned him to get in at once. After giving the place a last final glance just as he perched in the driver’s seat, he sensed her caress his cheek with a grin, “Don’t worry this is the last time you are visiting this place. Come on, let’s get going otherwise these guards will start bothering us.” She announced watching out for the two guards who were standing near their car keeping their eyes on them.

Raven sighed looking in the same direction tiredly, “God knows when will I be free of their spying eyes!”

Tbc....

Chapter 24. His mother...

They reached his parents house. It was located in the main area of Seattle. And as for now they were sitting in the hall, relieved. Nobody ever saw Raven too much at peace before in these two years of Billy's existence. For the first time in life, he felt so proud of himself for having made such a wonderful decision that was pulling everything together at its correct place.

Just like a puzzle, all the parts were being placed in the proper place. They were now a complete family with a perfect couple, cute baby and their supporting parents and a big brother cum best friend who helped in every condition.

Mrs. Carter placed the tray of cookies on the round small dark brown wooden table after handing the cups of coffee to everyone around. Her lips never forgot to maintain that happy smile indicating how joyous the moment was at the time. "I just checked on them. Billy is sleeping and Kiara is beside him near the bed massaging his wrists to soothe the pain of needles." She announced taking her place on the sofa beside her husband.

They looked cute together. The smiles on their faces seemed so consoling and obviously the homely environment was adding to their happiness. It happened after three years that they were sitting together as family because after Raven's wedding, he shifted in his bungalow and even Girard settled down in his apartment a few miles away from their house.

They had to set schedules to come up like a family and spend time together. All thanks to Shania. She never liked to stay with them. She was forced to stay in their house during pregnancy just because Raven could not look after her the whole day. He had his office life to focus at.

Today, it was different. In fact the last one week was different and fulfilling. Mrs. Carter closed her eyes breathing deeply while Girard replied to her announcement, "See I was right. I knew it from the beginning, Kiara is made for this dumb head. They both are made for each other." Everyone smiled, Raven though had an awkward grin that spoke of his mistakes, guilt as well as his idiocy that he showed by separating from her. "I agree I had messed her life, bullied her but I have always been in the limits coz I knew it will bother me in the future as a 'Brother in law'—remembering everything I'd do to her for in the end she was going to be a part of our crazy family." He added sipping his beverage. "But I am happy she is here, I missed seeing her innocent face. I like her cuteness"

They all agreed with a nod. A Friday cannot be as perfect as this. They never had such a good time together where they were sitting wisely without any tension, Billy was sleeping soundly in the room with his mother— Uhh, 'Step mother' but lovely one caressing his hairs to sleep and them enjoying the passing of the evening with a hot cup of coffee and choco chip cookies freshly baked by the best baker of the house, Mrs. Kelly Carter.

Life has never been this peaceful until...*distant noise of screeching tyres*

They heard some noise coming from outside their house. "What is that?" Mr. Carter questioned placing down his cup of coffee.

The others did the same while getting up to go and see what was going on outside. "Seems like someone has come! Uhh, may be my advocate to give some good news regarding Billy's custody and the case." Girard guessed as they slowly and curiously marched toward the door.

His guess was obviously wrong, no doubts. Regardless, it did give rise to a hope of keeping Billy with them always. Yeah, won't it be wonderful? You can see him growing old without going through any more therapies for the diseases he was suffering and living a life with no more problem of visiting courts every time whenever the notice arrived.

"I wish what you guessed is a hundred and one percent correct, Gerry!" Mr. Carter heaved a sigh with a cute smile that stayed until they saw who was walking through the door.

They were a foot away from the main door when suddenly it thud open with full force and there strode in the depressed billionaire's ex wife, Shania. Their expressions quickly changed to pale ones as they eyed her march with attitude that said about her personality.

She looked dangerously beautiful in that red one piece that hardly reached until her mid thighs with no sleeves. Her hairs were weirdly styled in a way that seemed more like of a psycho putting forward how crazy she was. There were strange marks of scraping on her arms stretching along her neck line and her calves that made Raven to close his eyes in defeat.

'She must have slit her skin with a sharp object again!'

He thought darting his eyes on her face that entertained the looks that of a madwoman. "What do you want?" His contact with her eyes broke swiftly when Girard came forward shielding his family. His tone was rude warning them beforehand to keep aside any plans they have come here with, if any.

He bit his lower lip in awkwardness as the realization engulfed him. Ohh, she was not alone. Her piggy father with a big fat belly that of a pregnant woman was also standing behind her, who he failed to notice until he came forward. "If you have lost your brains then let me help you bring it to its place and inform you that today— is Friday. And as per the court's instruction we are to meet our Billy today."

Shit! How can they forget it!

Well then it was no wonder why they forgot it. A person tend to get some memories off their minds when they see it occurring often. Same here. "Ohh sorry Mr. Avram, it just slipped off our minds! You cannot blame us either. How can you assume to have us remember that Billy has a mother!" It was Mr. Carter this time who spoke. Better, if the elders talk face to face, isn't it?

“A mother who has come to see him almost after two months!”

The addition of his mocks turned their faces tedious. It was quite funny if you ask about it to Girard. The way her father breathed and the way his belly moved in and out he can't control himself from going there and touching his bump to check whether there was a baby inside or was it because of the fat! He was a piece of antique, really.

“Now that you do, just let me go in” For the first time throughout this while, Shania spoke. Yet, there was no way Girard could suppress his laughs watching her father gnash his teeth in vexation. He parted his lips in order to ask him to stop that or else he would end up having serious problems of bruxism, lol. Needless to say, he could not fulfil his desire of doing so because his brother has walked in the ring of arguments taking over them.

Even the guards walked in seeming baffled. They kept standing there with no physical fight, it was quite shocking for them. The two uniformed officers have seen so many things happening around this house between them but having them stand silently just by killing each other with their speech was something to witness surely. “Billy is asleep. Come afterwards.” Girard announced coming ahead of Raven.

He so very well know his brother. He won't stop her from going in the bedroom to avoid any fight now, only for Billy. Nevertheless, what he's forgetting is that Kiara is in there too. “Dad, will you speak or should I!” She said to her father conveying her warning to everyone.

It was now turning serious. The heat was rising. Having fisted his fingers Girard hymphed annoyingly. Who she dared to warn! Him? Them? With what face!?

Firstly she turned up after months of avoiding Billy. She did not even care to comfort her own baby who was crying in the hospital out of all the pain he had to bear just because of her. And now, when he was kind of okay and was sleeping peacefully in her real (not blood) mother's arms, this woman had to appear out of nowhere and ruin everything.

He took a step forward to reply regardless, “Girard!” the guards positioned to budge in. It was not required since Raven had held his brother already. “Let her go.” He stated looking straight in her eyes with no blinks at all.

Having him said that, Shania smiled widely as she quickly made her way past them into the passage ahead towards Raven's old room. “Rave, are you crazy. You know Kiara is inside. How can you let her go in there?!” After she was gone with her pig father following her, Girard pulled his brother by the arm putting forward his disappointment.

Notwithstanding, the reply he got was mind blowing. “I know brother, but let Billy's mother fight his fears!”

Tbc...

Chapter 25. Scared...

Kiara's point of view...

How can Shania be so diabolical cunning. She tried to kill her own children and killed one already! I am confused to know she wants Billy. Why but!? To kill him?! Cut him into pieces and then throw him somewhere in the trash?! "I don't know baby why your mother tried to kill you but I promise you I will keep you safe always. I may not be your mother who brought you in this world but I will wean you like my own flesh." His hands are so tiny and soft.

Such a cute baby he is.

It was fantastic. I could feel that I had a great responsibility. This sleeping bundle of joy on the bed gave me the feelings as though I only made him. "Billy!" my eyes were fixed on his skin when a feminine voice broke into the room that I looked up from him to the door.

As soon as my eyes fell at there, I froze in my position. "Kiara!" As shocked as me Shania stood there stunned blinking her eyes blankly while I could only manage to gasp in amusement.

What has she made herself into! She not at all looked like the Shania I have known and studied with in the college. Her hairs freaked the hell out of me. I don't mind calling her a psycho because that is how she seemingly portrayed herself right now.

She was silent, staring me baffled. I can see the rise and drop of emotions in her eyes while her white porcelain skin glistened in the light. Only her beauty was something that didn't change but added more to her perilousness. "Ohh so my men were right, Carter has come up with this shitty plan." We would not have come back to the present if her father had not uttered that.

We both gave ourselves time by looking away to summon up our strengths to face this all. "See Shania, your bastard husband has got a new wife to win Billy's custody. Surprisingly, it is none other than his ex who you made him to leave." He laughed. Trust me, I felt like giving a slap across his face or rather stab something in his stomach for talking about that all.

It was just awakening the pain I had gone through years ago. In fact, I can't stop myself from sardonically smiling when I saw her look down. She was the reason behind the doom of my life. She lurked Raven, forced him in such a way that he ended it all by breaking up with me.

"You think you can take away our grandchild! Girl, you have no idea what we had to do to separate you from your 'too blinded in love boyfriend' to leave you!"

"Dad please." She lifted her palm across his face interrupting him from speaking further. All the while her eyes darted through mine with rich intensity that nervoused me for a second. She was that woman who destroyed my life and now she was standing in front of me, all destroyed!

This is called Karma.

Life is surely unpredictable. A few weeks ago I was a single woman with no one beside me. No friendsto comfort me. But now I was a wife, a mother of a child who needed me and above all, an individual woman who has responsibility on her shoulders.

“I want to meet my Billy.” She calmly spoke fixing her eyes on her father’s face however I knew it was addressed to me, taking slow steps towards the bed.

I instantly stepped aside giving her the space to sit on the bed and see her son. No matter how cruel she is, she is still his mother. She bent down stroking his face lightly while her father stared me. I stared back giving hard glares back to him as well.

His stares were discomfoting. I could sense them travelling everywhere on my skin. “Billy got a new mum, that means he forgot his real mum.” I craned my head to see Shania talking to Billy frequently shaking him.

Was she trying to wake him up? I reckoned looking back to see her father who now winked at me rubbing his chest. I pursed my lips rolling my eyes disgustingly with vulgar expression. How can I expect Shania to not do anything wrong providing that her parents were such morons!

I felt relieved to see Raven occurring behind him in the doorstep. It gave me some strength. Having stood amidst strangers who got me nervous, I badly desired someone known to come and have my back at this time. “Waahhh! Waaaahhh” I surprisingly twitched in my spot as soon as I heard Billy cry.

And that was the moment when I realized that he was awakened. Much to my curiosity, he was wriggling to go away from Shania as she struggled to pull him close in her arms. He turned on his stomach crawling on the other than side of bed. “Come back here you filthy piece of shit! How dare you disrespect your mother! I came all the way from France leaving behind my spa appointment just to see you but no, you want to cry and run away. Come back here Billy!” I wish my ears drums could burst before hearing such unethical tone referring to poor Billy.

I held my heart running on the other side of the bed to catch him as he was on the verge of slipping down the edge of the bed while his mad mother dipped on the same with her force trying to chase him. “Billy!!!” I held him near my chest rubbing his back.

His skin has turned red. He cried on top of his voice amidst his lungs torturing scream near my neck. He was badly shaken. It ripped my heart to see him cry like that. “Shania, BEHAVE!” Her father tried to control her, she wriggled to reach me hitting her claws in the air while moved away.

Oh my gosh! I can’t believe this poor soul had seen such heart shattering scenes that was shaking him even now. Thankfully Raven pulled her away and the guards came too at once. “Leave me! I will kill you both. You have become pain in my ass, I said leave me!” She was dragged out with difficulty along with Raven by the guards.

I stood there hugging his son close to myself with streaming eyes, too scared to let him go. His life was in my hands now.

Tbc...

Chapter 26. Just Mine...

The situation was under control now. Thanks to Girard and the two officers that they managed to take her out of the house soon, bravely. I can't describe what has gone through me! She has changed into a mad woman. All the way to the hall she kept screaming, threatening Raven and abusing Billy for running away from her. Shania was dragged out while she extortionately shouted that she will take away Billy from this house and do something worst to him.

"Hey Billy, do you want to play some games?" The poor kid stick close to me still quivering with the incident that just took place. I don't know what else has he seen that made him run out of her arms like that. He literally crawled to save his life no matter whether he was going to fall down on the other side!

"Come on we will watch Noddy, that's your favourite, isn't it!" He sat on the bed quite reluctantly next to me. His arms lingered in my thigh as I looked for the remote. As I switched the TV on, he smiled for a nano second with squeal that faded soon as it left his mouth.

"Mam-ma" My eyes widened in bewilderment hearing him chip 'Mamma' lifting his arms in my direction asking me to pick him up.

I quickly took him in my arms placing kisses on his head and cheeks loving him as much as I can. "Yes baby, mamma is here with you. There is no need to fret from anything, hmmm." He smiled looking in my eyes as if telling me, Yes I got you.

He took few minutes to adjust in the context and focus on the cartoon playing in his front and soon, the room bust into mirth with his cute chuckles and claps.

He fell asleep after eating a little food. He was still being given the meal prescribed by his physician. However, the thing that relieved me was his recovery. He forgot that his mother has even come here. In fact, he was roaming around in the hall calling me 'Mummy' while I made him eat his food.

"Thanks Kiara." I turned around to see Raven standing against the door with his back resting on it.

He grinned thankfully as I passed him a smile asking him to come and sit next to me. He didn't take longer than a second to obey my words. I covered his little prince with his blue quilt with care. "I was told Billy turned the house upside down! Is that true?" I can't stop smiling as Raven asked.

Yes he did that. He threw Girard's phone, bit him on the wrist, fought with his grandma since she was not letting him keep open the refrigerator door, broke a plate in the kitchen while playing with his rubber ball and also, littered the sofa set in the back foyer with cumin seeds that he stole from his grandma while she was cooking.

“Umm yeah, many things but cute ones.” I said giving him a glance. I am sure they won’t mind him do this all for what Raven has said so far about Billy, I think this is his very first mischief he made in his entire life. May be because of me as I did not let anyone scold him!

Just a day of recovery and I have beforehand begun to spoil him.

“Kiara, you know these are all his firsts, and I am happy he actually did them. I can’t tell you how badly have I wished to see my son running around the house and bother his grandparents and uncle.” There was a forlorn silence in his tone. I could sense he was back in his land of past where he was currently watching Billy in the state where he could not even stand up properly.

“I know that.” I placed my hand on his wrists pulling him close that he was partially on me. “Girard told me that in advance.” Smiling chastely I unclasped the first few buttons of his shirt.

He was surprised to see me do that. Why not, after what we saw together in the first week of our marriage I was adamant to go my way. He has deceived me enough with his lies and actions. Regardless of what I saw with my eyes, especially Shania and her psychic skills I am left with no other feeling than guilt and sympathy. I can really not hold him wrong. He has suffered enough as well.

I switched out places hopping on top of his stomach. He seemingly relaxed under me quite nervously. This was going to be our first intimate position apart from kisses and partial cuddles. “Kiara, Uhh I think— we should go out and— have our dinner.” He fumbled when I seductively rubbed my palm on his bare chest definitely sending currents within his veins.

Well for his information, his parents and Girard has gone out to meet his advocate after getting a call from him. They asked me to tell the same to this billionaire husband of mine as he was out for some reasons! “Yes we will.” I stated taking my hairs on one side hence giving him clear view of my neck.

“Umm Kiara, we need to stop this. I don’t want to make you feel bad about it. You will regret this later, I know that.” If I wanted to regret it later than I wouldn’t have been doing this in the first place.

Notwithstanding I know what he needs right now and what I want from him. I joined our foreheads placing light peck on his lips. I am though trying my best to be bold and seductive yet it is difficult to take the lead and dominate him. I can’t do this. This is not my cup of tea!

“Stop this now Kiara or else we will regret this later!” His tone was husky and contained warning. The changing expressions on his fair face said how much he was controlling himself out of his limits and anytime from now, he will lose his calm. I want him to make the next move, I can’t do it!

“Enough!!!!” Having said that aggressively he turned our places coming on top of me again.

A gasp of contentment broke out of my mouth feeling his manhood torture my sex with its erection. "You called this upon you." With that he pinned my hands on the edge of the bed latching our lips. Tonight, I will make sure all the barricades between us are broken. I want to feel him, claim him as mine. JUST MINE!

TBC...

Chapter 27. I want you to love me...

(18+ content ahead. Read at your risk)

Two months later...

The morning was fresh and life, amazing! There was cool breeze rolling over while the warm body on the bed beside Kiara's made her smile. She turned on her back looking at her husband. He looked like a kid sleeping peacefully with hairs ruffled. However, the marks on his skin made him look more beautiful.

It reminded her about their hot make out they had the last night. It was fierce and kind of rougher than the earlier times. Luckily they were in their bungalow not in his parent's or else her loud screams and ears numbing moans would have made the scene awkward and horrible.

The good part was even Girard was out for some business work giving them perfect night of their life that was better, more enjoyed and ultimately one of the longest nights of their love making. "Rave! Get up we need to go and see Billy. He will bother your parents with his tantrums." She lovingly ruffled his hair, he smiled in the middle of his yawn as he sluggishly opened his eyes.

"Not fair Kiara." He crawled over her shoulder placing his head on her breasts. Her mouth formed an oval in shock seeing him go back to sleep. "Billy gets more of your attention than me! I know your baby boy will not stay at peace if you won't go and see him but at least give some importance to me as well, I am your husband." he stated snuggling her cleavage.

He was correct. Billy have become her whole and sole priority in these months. He not only have quickly recovered but also became a naughty boy who does not stop messing around unless his Mamma asks him to. He loves her attention. You give him everything at one hand and his mother on the other, he will choose his mother. She has become his personal property. Not only this but he doesn't even like his Father placing kisses on her cheeks or lips.

Anyway Kiara smiled dipping her slender fingers in his hair. "Really Mr. Carter!" There was suspicion as well as sarcasm playing along with her words. "I don't give you time! If I don't give you time then may I know who are you sleeping here with!" Raven lifted his head looking her face with partially unlatched eyes.

He smooched her lips for heavenly minutes and replied, "This is my wife, my Kiara." She raised her brow doubtful of his words. "The woman who is my superhero, my superwoman, my everything and my goddess" Though it was something to feel shy upon and look down with blush however, what she did was indeed mind numbing!

Kiara pushed him aside not aggressively obviously and went inside the wash room. He blinked his eyes for a second trying to understand her mood. She never did that! Why now all of a

sudden! “Hey what happened?” Sitting in a half laid and half sitting posture he threw his weight on his elbow while pulling the sheets on his stomach.

What he does not know was that, his compliment of her being ‘His everything’ didn’t satisfy her. Because THERE WAS SOMETHING WHICH HE DIDN’T KNOW! And it was adamant that once he would know that, he would be damn shock. She was planning something real big.

Never mind, this was not new. From past few weeks he had experienced her mood swings like this and much more intense ones too. Without replying she entered in the wash room closing the door on her back. “My everything! My foot.” Kiara murmured turning the showers on.

The cold water droplets made her arch her back at the feeling. Her body was painted with the marks of his teeth and the carving of his nails. Her skin was painted beautifully. She hugged her waist lifting her head up so that the water can drench her face completely. “If I really was his everything then he would not have left me and moved on with another woman. He is a liar!” She said to herself standing in that position letting the water to do its magic on her skin, the magic of soothing.

“Who is a liar, love? Is that me.” A pair of strong arms engulfed her from the back. Kiara promptly open her eyes to look at her darling husband’s face as he rest his chin on her shoulder. He was just perfect. Why will not any other women play tricks like Shania to win him over. He was a perfect package of hotness, seduction, infatuation and torture.

His piercing gaze could turn anyone hot. Perfect eight pack abs could seduce anyone. That heart ripping smile can make anyone get infatuated with his looks and lastly, his body could torture anyone like it did to her.

Kiara closed her eyes suppressing her emotions. ‘No Kiara, not now. Wait for the correct time. The time is not far away, have patience. Even you will get the chance to do it.’ She told herself in mind, more of controlling herself from doing anything wrong.

There was a fierce battle going within her heart. Irony was that she could not share it with anyone. Not even with Raven. “Umm no one just like that, I just felt like to... Uhh, liked— to curse like that.” She forced a smile turning around speaking anything. Locking her eyes with his Kiara pulled him close.

They were without any clothes and so her large breasts pressed against his torso in a compromising way. His manhood did no good in this case. It poked her womanhood making it wet for it already. Kiara massaged his nape as her other arm trailed down his throat to his chest then directly round over his back.

He surreally explored infinite secrets lying within her. And having him to herself was one of them. Raven smiled watching her closely. She had been a good torture and seducer lately and the way she has desired him every now and then as though there was no tomorrow, it made him realize how much he missed her over these years.

"Raven, love me. I want to feel you more and more into me. I want you to love me the best you can." She dragged themselves near a wall across. She stood sandwiched between him and the wall while directing his lips down to her neck in urgency. "I want you now."

Her wish was his order that he was ought to complete. Raven didn't wait for another second and immediately attacked her neck sucking her skin severely. He locked his one arm around her waist and the other one busied itself squeezing and playing with her breast. He travelled it down until her clit giving it light strokes.

Kiara grasped at the bust of enormous feeling. His first two fingers went in and out of her hole while the water overhead did its perfect work of giving a push to his rage. Raven groaned pinching her lips between her legs that resulted into making her open her mouth at the beautiful pain that gush down between her legs.

Kiara moaned while Raven accepted this chance to ravish her mouth. He kissed every freaking inch of her mouth closely sucking her tongue. He brought his hands together pressing both her boobs at the same time with such aggression that she kind of jumped arcing her back.

He pinched her mounds lifting her up until her pink nipples were rubbing on his wet lips. Raven shot a glance on her face that shone with desires and fulfilment. The next moment he instantly ambushed her poor breasts torturing them until he was satisfied.

"Uhhh, Raven!" Kiara screamed placing her hands on his shoulders taking support. Her knees turned weak with his increasing passion.

No sooner did she take a breath after chipping his name than he turned her around all set to enter in her. Raven caressed her butt lightly before he harshly entered from behind while the entire bathroom resonated with her painful moans.

Tbc...

Chapter 28. Blissfully amazing...

Raven's point of view...

"I might get late today so you stay back with my mom and Billy." We were driving to my parent's house. Luckily there was not much traffic at this time as compared to the other days.

I placed my hand on Kiara's thigh giving it a light squeeze that she turned to see me with a smile. She has been off these days not talking much or throwing her tantrums on me like she did in the first month of our marriage. We celebrated our two months anniversary three days ago and ever since then I have realized that she has cut herself from talking to me openly!

Uhh, may be because this is a new phase of our life. I think I am over thinking. It is still very difficult to accept reality, and I am glad Kiara is doing it better than any other women who is married to her ex after going through a lot of mess!

"Raven I... I am not feeling good." I scrunched my brows at her statement. Yes, I could see that with my eyes that she was not well and I wish she tells me what is bothering her.

We reached there a minute after she confessed her feelings to me. Pulling the brakes I unlatched my seat belt sitting across. Leaning in the front, I brought her hands in mine kissing them assuringly. "What is it that is bothering you, hmm!" I joined our foreheads pecking her cheek.

She seemingly smiled at my action with a blush. Now that is like my Kiara, who blushes on everything I do. "I don't know. Uhh! May be it's Billy and his custody! Raven I have developed a motherly bond with him. I can't bear to lose him now. I love him. I don't want to see him cry again like that day!" I agree, my son has grown closer to her.

He can't eat without having her sit next to him. Billy have more attachment with her than me or anyone in my family. I fear if she ever leaves me, what will I do with my kid. He refuses to eat without her, he cries for her presence. I cannot stand to even experience that ever. It will be the last thing I can ever imagine!

"Don't worry we will have Billy to ourselves. The guards have agreed to speak in our interest. They have seen how Billy reacts around her. She had almost ripped him!" I said caressing her knuckles.

I would not have said that earlier until she came and gave me the motivation. When she is with me I know it will surely happen. "Okay now in or else you know what you will call upon you!" Kiara chuckled recognizing the last Friday's scene.

We just happened to be an hour late and Billy didn't talk to her. He threw his tantrums on everyone until Kiara held him in a hug kissing him as long as he wanted her to himself. "Bye. Take care and be back soon!" she kissed me on the cheek opening the door to go out.

We waved each other with flying kisses, and she walked in the house while I pulled the gear to take my journey toward my office.

In the evening, It was tiring but I felt good. I like to work with my supportive and dedicated employees. It was time to leave. I gathered my stuff while wearing my coat at the same time. I shuffled through some emails on my laptop and there came a knock on the door, as I looked at up from my phone, "Ohh Girard." I smiled at him. "Interesting! You never knocked before walking in, why so much change all of a sudden!" I added further only to get a 'are you kidding me' look in reply.

He sat on the chair in the front replying verbally, "Is it necessary brother, how can I just not knock when I know my baby brother is married, and he can be busy anytime with his wife!" I can't suppress the urge of throwing the paperweight on him. I have noticed how frequently he is teasing me nowadays.

Nonetheless, his naughty smile swiftly transformed into a serious face, I sat my ass on my chair watching him thoroughly as he spoke, "Rave, I met my advocate today, and we had serious conversation regarding the custody case." He leaned in placing his arms on the desk in front whilst continuing, "He said we did play a good part by getting you married to Kiara and—" Okay, it was good if I am not wrong yet the expression he passed me gave me chills.

Girard is not someone who likes to beat around the bush. He is straight forward with a damn giving nature. Having him speak such seriously, I held my breaths waiting for him to continue. "And what? Continue. I want to know further Gerry." When he refused to talk I took the moment to request him.

He was more serious than me regarding this case. It was Girard first who learned Shania's motives and even, she had tried to get intimate with him in my absence. It became one of his reasons to not let her affect me or my family at all. "And he said we have hundred percent chances of winning this case!!!!" He shouted amusingly raising his hands in the air.

What the heck!!!

He almost killed me with his nonsensical prank. Damn it. Who scares his brother like this! I left my seat in rage. On reaching his side I playfully hit him, slapped him on the arm while he laughed loudly increasingly irritating me. "You homicidal bitch... You killed my mood! Who does that to their younger brother."

"Who can do that other than me!" he replied covering his head to protect him. "But trust me Rave I was more depressed than you. Can you believe how did I live my life with the feeling of losing Billy! It indirectly means, losing you!" He rose ruffling my hairs.

Told you, he is more into my son than me. He will die but won't let anyone take him away from us. "Thank Kiara. She built your ruining hope back into a palace where you are living now

happily. Dude she is just perfect for you. Don't hurt her ever again." We hugged each other for a good time.

Now it is not only his wish alone, I have also decided that I will do anything but never ever hurt her. It is my resolution for a new good life she gifted me." Come on let's go" With his arm around me we walked together out of the exit talking casually, " By the way did I tell you that your son called and asked me to buy him a peesha (pizza)"

Tbc...

Chapter 29. Will it be like this...

There was no hint of sadness or depression around Carter villa. Another three months passed in jiffy marking some more of memories for them to cherish.

They were celebrating life and making moments blissful. Billy has been the centre of attraction and a jealous baby who hated his mother being touched or adored by his father. All in all they were having a whale of a time together.

But not everyone is happy with your celebration, isn't it. There are some exceptions who hate your success. In the same way, there was someone who was not happy with it. It irked them seeing how joyous their life was going on and how much were they memorializing it.

"I want Billy daddy. He is.. He is my son. Raven will spoil him. Didn't... Didn't you see how was my baby running away from me? Raven is manipulating him against me. Daddy I want my kid!!!!" Shania threw her legs and arms in air wriggling on her maniacly.

Her white night gown was red with blood while there was a body of a pup lying beside her bed cold and unmoving. She clutched the sheets thunderously roaring on her voice. Her father tried to bring her under control alas, she was not someone who could be calmed easily.

"I will bring Billy to you, baby. Don't hurt yourself." He announced sitting beside her on the bed.

Shania stopped whining. She quietly stared her father with hopeful eyes. "You are not lying, no dadda? You will really bring me my kid, won't you?" she asked him emphasizing each and every word thoroughly.

She got a confident nod in reply thus making a victorious smile to adore her lips. Shania kissed dad on the cheek hugging him thankfully. "Yes lovely. Next month we have the last hearing of Billy's custody. And it will be in our interest I promise you that." He stated looking at the broken frame of Billy and Shania.

She clung more on his arm snuggling his shirt. "I trust you daddy. And I also want Raven. I miss him too. Please bring him back too. I don't want to see him with Kiara again. I love him more than her. And daddy she will spoil him. She is not a good company. Too good to be a wife!" she breathed holding out another photo frame from under her pillow.

It was blanketed with blood and enough cuts on the picture that ruined his facial features. You cannot decipher whether it was Raven himself or any man who have unfortunately suffered under some attack that made him like that! "Raven is handsome and hot and cute and—" she stated describing words in his respect trailing a thumb over his body as if she owned it. "I love him more than myself!"

Shania batted her lashes unbelievably and her father was sure something was going on in her head. And it was ensured when she said it out excitingly. "Daddy I love Raven. I love him. I want him back. I promise I will be a good wife this time." She held his wrist attempting her best to persuade him to say yes.

And as she desired, happened. Her father sighed conqueringly. "Okay! I got it, you will get Raven too. Happy!" he held his breath trying to keep standing on his legs when Shania jumped on him, hugging him tight!

"Mummy will you— give me cocolaat (chocolate) if I— Uhh I will hel you cook!" little gentleman Billy, emphasized every word while breaking his sentence multiple times. He was standing near the kitchen slab in front of his Mamma who was stirring something in a pan.

After he did quite a lot of fun around the house he stumbled in the kitchen trying to convince his mamma to give him a reward for something he could not do. Lol. Kiara chuckled over his words. She has been both good and bad impression on him.

Good impression for teaching manners and bad because she has spoiled him for giving him something in return whenever he followed her orders. And now it has become a daily routine where either she will give him something to take her words or he will approach her with a good deal to make a consideration.

"Yes mummy, will you give me!" his brows were raised, pink lips coated with his saliva as he suck his two fingers cutely while his grandpa's file hung on his forearm, a measure toy he was obsessed with these days.

Kiara bent down matching his height. Billy walked in her arms hopefully gaping her with blinking lashes like a doll setting her heart to melt in liquid form. "Yes, mummy will give you cocolaat only if you go and give this box to your granny out there." She stated pulling his cheek lovingly. Kiara pointed her index finger out in the huge hall where her mother in law was sitting with few files in her lap and tons scattered on the table in front.

Billy did not say anything, he simply just accepted her words walking like a duck looking extremely adorable. Kiara had the urge to kiss him to death, he was that cute. "Ganny this is for you." He enthralled her focus that was stuck on the file she held near her chest looking at it thoroughly.

Mrs. Carter smiled in awe fixating her retinas on the bundle of joy of her abode who stretched out a box to her. Box of her medicines that just arrived from the nearby online community pharmacy. "Thank you darling. So sweet of you." Billy lowered his head in shyness when her granny kissed his forehead appreciating his hard work. He shook from left to right like a wind up toy feeling great at the love he was showered with.

After that, he quickly scurried back to her mamma who was waiting with a Ferrero Rocher in her hand. "Ohh I should have known that." Mrs. Carter announced registering the drama going

on around with a glint of humour. “It was for the chocolate otherwise this kid wouldn’t have even come to see me! Selfish kiddo” She remarked knocking on the box of her meds in the air.

Kiara leaned forward in a standing position kissing the little dude on the hair as she placed the chocolate bar in his palm. “Thank you Mamma” Billy grinned thankfully. She brimmed happily watching him roam around in the hall joyously.

Uhh, will it always be like this happy and healthy or will there also be a second face to this!

Tbc...

Chapter 30. What's wrong...

Days were passing in a jiffy. And with the passing time Billy's attachment toward Kiara grew more. He became her obedient son who behaved himself only on her insistence. Ate food only when she sat with him by taking him in her lap and stuffing his little mouth with food with her hands. He slept only on her chest being lulled with love and read stories.

All in all she has become an obsession of his life. An obsession that was giving him immense comfort and happiness. "Mu-mmmmy!" He slurred kicking his legs in the air while laying on the floor on the back. Kiara was busy keeping his tiny clothes in the cupboard and there he was whining just because she was not taking him in her arms.

Billy flipped on his stomach. He rose from the floor on his elbow staring her longingly as she folded his another few shirts those were supposed to be kept alone since they were to be washed again due to the stains it had on them. All thanks to his new habit... A new game he explored a week back. He would frequently go out in the garden to play with mud and little insects under the security of the two officer appointed and so dirtying his clothes as badly as he can.

"What do you want baby? I am working, go and play with your toys." It was said in order to distract his mind as there were more chores lined up to work on however, it only annoyed him more. Billy fell on the floor again with thud thus crying loudly with tears. "Billy!" Kiara sighed watching him cry as loud as he can.

There was nothing she could do rather than leaving all the work aside and pulling him up from the floor. As soon as she picked him up, he stuck to her chest hugging her tight as if she would go away if he won't hold on her tight. He sniffed near her throat while his tears moistened her skin.

He never cried unless he was not disturbed or sleepy. Today, Uhh his reason for crying in her arms was different. Kiara blinked her lashes only to see how he sobbed in her embrace. Something was disturbing him. What? Only Kiara knew. She smiled serenely looking away. He was a kid who didn't have any brains to think anything as to what was going around. But he just felt something that was going to happen real soon to him.

May be he feared to accept it and that was why he held her as if she was his precious fortune. Kiara hugged him close resting her chin on his head. By that act of hers, he seemed to have stopped crying still his sobs were audible. "Why are you so upset today?" She said in the air walking toward their balcony.

Mrs. Carter was down there cooking something special. Girard has made a wish to eat her handmade Curry in the morning on breakfast table. And here, Kiara was putting Billy's clothes in the cupboard but no, her little soldier was not in the mood to let her do so.

He was sleepy. The way he snuggled her neck while clutching her collar tight she could sense he was as usually whining just because he was sleepy, and wanted to sleep. For that, he needed his mother's embrace to sleep in. She grinned noticing how he sucked on her skin of the cleavage as though he was sucking a nipple. She closely read his every movement.

"Hey!" Kiara turned her head a little to the west. Her husband was back from his hefty work and now snaking his arms around her waist while kissing her neck. "Don't spoil his habits Kiara, or he'd always want your embrace to sleep in. He is a bit more stubborn than me you see." He said rubbing his palm on his back adoring The Mother and The Son's unique bond.

Raven can't thank her enough for the favour she did on him— on them. She handled his home very well. "Kiara, there is last hearing on the Custody Case Next Friday in the high court at 2.00 pm." She held Billy close. There was so much she was fidgeting with in the mind and now, the most complicated situation. "The lawyer wants you to be present there with us. You are required to be there in the court as it will show how much you and Billy are close to each other. And that you are his ideal mother who can keep him safe and wean him properly unlike Shania. The guards will speak in our interest too." She caressed Billy's hair while walking inside the room.

The winds were getting faster and harsher. May be a strong rainstorm was on its way to occur just like the one that was approaching their lives. "Close the doors Raven." She asserted sitting on the bed with Billy still in her arms sleeping peacefully.

Kiara pulled her legs up on the bed sitting with them stretched out in her front while she stroked the sleeping Billy's back. "After the hearing we will move in our abode with Billy. I can't tell you Kiara how happy I am. It is all because of you that I can take my baby to the house I made for him— for us, for our family." Raven smiled brightly putting his white teeth on show.

His gleaming eyes conveyed his excitement. Just few more days and then it will be all back to how he had wished his life to be. The way he blabbered talking about the things he has planned to do after Billy's custody is passed on to them, made her smile sadly.

"And you know what Kiara, we will also go to Armenia for family holiday. There is this woman who Girard was mad for, they were in relationship but you know how he is, she left him because of that. But you and I will bring them together, and We will go on couples date together. It will be fun." He squealed in joy sharing everything he was going to do right after the Friday night.

Albeit, he was just making castles of happiness in the air which has no reality at all!

Any ways, after seeing to it that Billy was perfectly into the blanket with a line of pillow kept around him like a barricade, so he doesn't fall, Kiara descended the stairs joining the Carters on the dinner table. Raven was there already, all freshened up and looking yummy in his black tee and grey trousers.

What made her stare him more was his wet dripping hairs that shone in the light. “Has he eaten anything before sleeping Kiara?” Mr. Carter was talking to Kiara, but she was too busy checking him out that she totally forgot there were people around. “Kiara!” Chipping her name a bit loudly this time Mr. Carter coughed a little glaring in his place while the lovey dovey couple looked away in embarrassment, Kiara especially.

“Uhh, mom pass me the bowl of rice please.” Raven smirked as she sat next to him biting her tongue awkwardly.

Why she have to be soo fucking stupid like that!

Tbc...

Chapter 31. Where is Kiara?

The morning hushed in bringing in something that nobody could have anticipated! The sun gleamed in the early morning while the squawking of birds echoed in the context. The lights of the City Seattle was off as it was the weekend. The citizens peacefully stayed in the bed calling it a perfect Sunday.

Raven moved in the bed breathing deeply. His hands craved to touch her soft skin that provided him console. He roamed his hand on the side of the bed next to him shrinking his brows with closed eyes. "Kiara!" He sleepily called trying to open his lazy eyes.

The side was empty. She was not there beside him, 'She must be in the wash room' with this thought he fell back on the pillow falling asleep instantly.

Raven was sure after he would open his eyes from his much needed sleep he would get to see his dear wife's face first thus turning his Sunday perfect alas, he didn't find her anywhere in their bungalow. He checked everywhere in the house.

From the kitchen to the garden down where she would go to have an early morning walk everyday, he checked almost in the places she could be at and much to his surprise, she was nowhere to be spotted. "Uhh may be she is at mom and dad's place with Billy!" Yet again he fucking thought rather than taking the situation seriously.

His wife was not there in the house. He didn't see her since the fucking morning. Instead of searching her he was idiotically hypothesizing her whereabouts other than going and looking for her. Raven afterwards moved to the kitchen to make himself a cup of hot black coffee with a quick diy omelette sandwich.

Billy must be crying and whining and like any others time throwing tantrums on his grandma which made her to call Kiara and ask her to come over. It has become his habit to see her face and be pampered by her with showers of kisses in the morning by her.

Unless she would not pick him up, kiss his forehead and make him eat his breakfast Billy won't eat or behave like a good kid. He wished for her presence all the time. And Raven was sure she must be there at his parent's house handling his stubborn son. "Just a few more days baby then your mamma will be there with you forever. You will not have to cry in order to call her to you." Rubbing his thumb on Billy's picture fixed on his wallpaper, he smiled.

Only four days more to the hearing and then Billy will be here in his real abode with his parents permanently. They will not have to drive miles to meet him! Raven can't control his happiness, this was the first time he was eagerly waiting for hearings day to appear.

However, Raven was surprised at the same time. Not because she left in the early morning only but because she did not even leave a message behind her like she always does! Kiara never

forgot to stick a note on the mirror leaving her message on it for raven. But today she didn't do that, not even a WhatsApp message talking about the same!

He sipped his coffee dialling her number. It is difficult to start a day without listening to her voice. She is not only Billy's obsession but his as well. Anyway, Raven have to place aside his coffee mug curiously. He cannot reach to her because her phone was switched off!

It was all confusing to him. First of all here untold leave to his parent's house and now this. "Why is her phone coming switched off! Kiara always charges her phone before going to sleep in the night. She did the same last night!" he nibbled on his thumb chewing on the nail.

He intriguingly stared her pic in the screen of the cellphone with batting lashes. Uhh, may be she had to do that because of Billy. "I Should go and meet her over there directly." With the being decided Raven went upstairs to take his car keys.

He ate the sandwich on his way to the car in three big bites chewing crazily. Also, he brought along a water bottle to drink. It is difficult to stay away from her. Damn difficult when after having a good make out in the night it is not possible to see her flushed tired face in the morning!

He loves to see her beauty. And he have noticed that after their love making she gleams like the first ray of sun in the early morning. The way she smiles seeing him in the bed after waking up and shying like it was their first time— just makes his day wonderful.

The music player was turn on. After some jazz music it played 'Only know you love her when you let her go' song by passenger played. It was actually on insistence of a guy who was sad and heartbroken because his girlfriend left him without even letting him know.

Raven let the music play. It was so meaningful and described the emotions amusingly. The singer seemed to be heartbroken when he made this song for the lyrics were just perfect and every word touched the strings of your heart. Anyone could feel the pain and expressions it wanted to convey.

Never mind, he was just a few minutes away from the alley that led to his parent's bungalow. Having taken a left turn carefully without hitting the cars those were parked on the side Raven pulled in stopping exactly on front of the fence less garden before the bungalow.

Instantly his lips curved into a smile while his eyes shut tight at the feeling. He can already sense his son crying and whining just because he wants his mamma to pamper him with her attention. Raven unbuckled his seat belt stepping out of his car. He passed the keys to the watchman before entering in through the door.

Just as he have expected was happening. Billy was crying on top of his lungs. He have just got into the entrance of the room, and he can hear his loud cries those were coming from his room located on the ground floor in the inside of the bungalow.

“Ohh Jesus!” There was a fresh smile on Raven’s face as he greeted his mother with a peck on her lips. He looked behind her as Billy’s cries increased. “Finally you came. Just look at your son, he has messed up his bed and crying harshly.” She said with an escape of a tired sigh.

Looking behind him with eager eyes she smiled, her focus totally distracted. She was tired of Billy’s whines and cries, all she wished now was to see Kiara’s face— her super daughter in law who can handle her grandson!

Just the morning and she was tired. Don’t know what would she do when the reality will hit her!

Okay, Raven stretched his arms walking past his mother toward his son’s room while his mother followed him. “What does my brat kid wants other than Kiara! Why is he crying even when she is there with him.” He stated walking ahead.

Notwithstanding, Mrs. Carter stopped in her track blinking her eyes in dismay. She looked down on the floor over Raven’s shadow with a dazed expression as she exclaimed, “But Raven, Kiara is not here!” He halted looking behind at his mother, confused.

“Not here? How is that possible mom. She left my house in the morning only. I thought you called her early for Billy.” He breathed scratching his nape.

His mother shook her head negatively while she said.

“That is what I want to ask you Rave, where is Kiara! She is not here. Nobody came in the morning.” Raven looked down blankly on the floor unable to comprehend what was going on!

If Kiara is not here at his parent’s house nor there in their dwelling then where is she!

Tbc...

Chapter 32. Kidnapped

The morning turned into the blackening evening while the search for missing Kiara still continued. Billy worsened his physical conditions crying constantly without taking a pause for even a second. His fair chubby cheeks swelled up paling severely. His azure blue eyes were not any different from what his cheeks appeared like! He has puffed up the skin around his eyeballs that occurred as if someone hit him on the eyes.

MR. Carter and Girard returned home soon after they got the information regarding Kiara's sudden intriguing missing report. They combined the sky and earth together doing their best to look for her everywhere possible. Girard even went to visit her apartment in Amsterdam where she stayed before getting hitched to his younger brother.

None of the three gentlemen of the Carter empire heaved a breath of relief ever since they were told Kiara was missing and Billy turned into a crying mess under her absence asking for his mother every time he parted his lips to speak.

"What should I do!" Raven tiringly sat on the bonnet of his Audi rubbing his face with a defeated sigh. He checked everywhere he could considering how dear the place was to his wife and how frequently she visited it. "If I had known Kiara will go missing in the morning then I would never have fallen asleep!" Tears flew from his eyes. They were red too with the realization that he did not see her face since the fucking morning.

Life was cruel. If it gave him happiness for a few months then it also gave him a shock just in a morning that was more grieving than anything else in his entire life. "Kiara, where are you? Please give me any clue about your location. I will put my life at stake to find you. Please come back. I miss you, Billy misses you. We all are missing you!" He shed a stream of tears gazing up at the changing colour of sky with blurry sight.

His life was changing in the same way. It started with a good notice after her arrival in his life turning it all blue and lively like a perfect morning's sky with her pleasing aura and now the same life was becoming black just like the sky over head after a period of fixed time.

If anybody had said that his tears were fake and just for the greed then may be one could have believed on it since there was a secret behind bringing her into his life. However, now nobody would dare to blame his tears for it was freaking genuine. He desired his wife back in his life who entered in like a fairy changing everything with a spun of her magic wand.

"I miss you Kiara. I just hope you are okay wherever you are and don't fret, your Rave will come to see you soon!" he talked as if she was sitting next to him on the bonnet of the car enjoying the changing sky.

An hour rolled by with the speed of the ray of light. Raven kept sitting there like a dead man looking particularly nowhere in the thin air. He looked so sick and feeble. His energy was all sucked away by the trauma of losing the location of his wife who he loved more than his life now. And also a baby who desired her, only her and nobody else.

Time was passing, Raven was getting ample of calls but the one he desired to flash on his screen was just an exaggerated wish. He let the phone ring uselessly. Even his brother and dad and yet like others they only got to be ignored by him. There was more important places to regret rather than sitting his ass and talking to everyone and listening to their condolences.

People call you more to mock you along with their sympathy in your hardships and Raven was someone who had hurt many with his deeds and so it was oblivious to get called at this point of time. Anyway, he was just rooted in the posture until he received a message from Girard on WhatsApp.

What surprised him was the beginning of the sentence he sent that began with, 'Rave I think Kiara i—' And to read the rest he can't sit and tame his emotions at the mention of his wife. Instantly the phone was pulled from beside his while he rushed through the messages he got finding the one he wanted to check.

Searching for Girard's contact number among the other Raven promptly tapped the profile to see the messages there were many and— his heart hitched vulnerably!

'Rave we checked everywhere we can but unsuccessful! But you don't worry, your brother will do his best to bring your wide back. I am talking with the cops and told them everything. The Chief even sent a team of patrolling team to search her. But Rave, I think Kiara is— kidnapped! I know it is funny to read but after trying to search her everywhere I can only conclude this! And I think, it is uhhh— Shania or her father!'

A year drop trickle on his cheek as he shockingly reread the ending line. His blood boiled at the mention of his ex wife and her mastermind father who have been a strong reason behind his hardships all the time.

Girard was online and probably waiting to get a reply however he was actually called by Raven at the same time. "Hello!" Girard spoke on the other side of the call seeming thrilled listening to his brother's deep breaths. Raven only does that when he is extremely angry or for That matter fidgeting to control his exasperation.

Girard however did not utter even after getting no reply instantly to his greet. "If what you said is true then they are dead!" and with that Raven disconnected the line speaking only his part of emotions and clearly avoiding to expand the talk any more!

He growled hopping on the grassy land facing the sky as the cold winds hit him. His heart nonchalantly chanted her name wishing for her safety. Raven wiped the saline drops out with the end of his sleeves from the palm side attempting to be focused.

It was not the time to cry like a coward. His wife is strong, and he knew she will take care of her in whatever situation she was. If inside he was praying for her well being than from the outside Raven clenched his fist, messing his hair, loosening the upper buttons of his tee sitting in the car readying himself to face his ex wife!

Igniting the engine urgently Raven pulled out on the deserted road driving gruesomely with high speed toward the one and only destination— his ex wife's lavish abode!

Tbc...

Chapter 33. I'll win you back

"Shaniaaaaa get the fuck out of your room!" Raven was being handled by a dozen of gatekeepers, no matter what he dragged all of them with him inside the mansion like a mad lion.

The guards wretchedly succumbed to stop him for he effortlessly marched in with heavy steps yanking them along with every step. Shania could not tame the beast in her front as he glared her with murderous eyes. Any the way she liked it. He is only one of a heck guy who excites her like this.

She worshipped his courage that he came here alone like the thunder in the dark night frightening everyone with his persona. The way he huffed in a manner resulting from betraying anger that was all because of the woman who was coming down slowly via the stairs.

Like any other evening, she was dressed in the shortest night dress going above her mid thighs putting her slender legs on a show with a plain shawl wrapped around her like a scarf covering her braless breasts. Shania satisfyingly grinned watching her ex husband on her door step.

With a sign of her hand she dismissed the guards while the other moment she ambled forward jiggling her hips rhythmically. She reckoned it will set his cells on fire in defiant of that, Raven cocked his brows abusing her grits.

"What brings my dashing man here in my house, hmm!" Shania silently whispered seldom unclasping her lips. Her body thud crashed with his pressing her front with his solid rock chest kind of rubbing herself on her.

She gratefully swepted her index finger on his cheek considerably lingering on his shoulder. It was worth playing with the fire while it was igniting the high with great fury. His eyes made her heart to thump in restlessness. She was testing his guys and obviously she was aware he would pain her the worst!

Erratically, Raven stayed quiet letting her do the heck she wished. He just wanted to see what she can do after everything that happened between them. "Come on let's go up to my room." She strode backward a bit allowing the air to fill in the gap between them.

Shania seductively massaged her palm on his shoulder as in the manner trying to soothe him however it only did give rise to irritation. She caressed the length of his arm until she reached his wrist gripping it. There was smile on her gloomy face. The stinking smell from her mouth told she must have been drinking at the time he landed her.

Her dizzy eyes and unusual acts showed she was not doing it in her senses. Despite that, she still had her senses on the edge clearly knowing what was she doing! Okay, so as Shania stretched a leg ahead to move Raven pulled her back.

He pushed her on the wall in the back of the massive hall getting into actions again. He did not come here to enjoy, he fucking wants to know what this psychopath woman did to her! "Don't play around with me Shania. I have had enough of your madness. Now just tell me where is my wife of I will kill you right here!" He clutched her neck that only made a grin to creep on her dry pink lips.

Shockingly as he loosened the force around her skin Shania helped his hand move in the south and halt on her waist as she pulled him with a smile closer. "A few months' ex girlfriend cannot be your wife!" she laughed blinking her lashes much to his infuriation.

The more he frowned the closer she pulled him roaming her hands everywhere on his body. Shania had difficult time controlling the compulsion to free his God like body from the fabric that covered it and seduce till the time he doesn't get ready to bang her hard in the bed.

"I know you miss me Rave. I can see that in your eyes, so come on, let's just go upstairs to my room, enjoy a glass of champagne and get lost to our fantasy! I can see how much you still desire me." He cannot rely on his ear at all. She was nonsensically disappointing him. "It has been a while we made out Rave, let's do it tonight. Please." Shania madly drew a line of kisses along her jaw to his collarbone.

She resigned her shawl allowing their exposed skin to brush against each other to increase his fascination. Although after their divorce and before him getting hooked up to Kiara, they slept together for infinite times. Just that she had to do exactly the same to tease his inclination.

Unluckily, her moves could not entice him this time for Raven woefully yanked her hair in a manner that she squirmed in pain woefully. "I don't like to repeat my words Shania, tell me where Kiara right now otherwise even I don't know what I will do to you!" If here his one arm busied itself hauling her head up to make an eye contact than on the other side, he twisted her arm on her back giving her a hard time to breathe!

"You are hurting me Raven." Her eyes shut tight at the rising ache in her body. "Your grip is—hurting me." She yet again managed to say not loudly enough still he heard it.

Unfortunately, as stubborn as he was— he only smiled making her taste her on medicine. Wasn't she habitual to this pain! She liked to paint her skin with scars that were still visible on her skin. Fresh ones. Anyway, asking again with perilous shout when Raven pushed her to the ground carelessly, her head hit a hard spot thus bleeding.

Even though she was in pain she smiled getting on his nerves as the blood drip on the carpet. Raven regrettably stared her. She have just worsened her habits. He sympathized her with a sad smile seeing how behaved— like a mad woman clapping her hands. Nevertheless, it was assured that she was not involved in Kiara's sudden missing. Rather, someone else!

"I always knew you love her more than you yourself knew it!" Now her eyes filled up with saline tears all set to fall down. "And that is why I made you leave her and be mine. Only mine." She was starting it again, and he didn't have time to deal with this.

So, turning around Raven marched back to the door while she continued to speak loudly on his back. "And I will make you mine again Raven. But not by kidnapping your wife or doing any harm to your family instead— I will woo you back. I promise." He had to stop and look back with a Sly smile.

Raven crossed his arms focusing on her face. "You think I will really come back to you!" Watching nod confidently he rolled his red eyes turning around again but not before making it clear that, "Try your best then. I'd like to see how far can you go!"

Tbc...

Chapter 34. Destroyed

He was back to the point where he has begun it. The hope that came to life with the possibilities that his ex wife could be the reason behind Kiara's missing manifested to be wrong. She had no hand in this matter and Girard was uselessly doubting her!

The evening he left behind whilst going to his ex wife's house was now changed into night. A dark regretting night that brought to the point where he was standing at before her entry in his empire. Raven sniffed recklessly seeing the stars.

After having that heated meeting with Shania he came back to the place where he was sitting at. Chronicle Point— a famous tourist attraction of the city with a valley and mountainous view in the north while a range of roads running in the back south. And whew he sat supporting his back on the metallic body of the car, was a grassy land with little insects running here and there under the moon light.

He had no wish to go home. There was no interest to think about the concerned topic called home. Raven could already see his son in the eyes still crying for her, and he was certain that his arrival will only make him cry more because every morning with him used to come his mamma. When she didn't and had to come late due to some reasons, he would ask him or simply wait at the door for her.

The figment of Billy brought another issue to think on— it was his hearing going to be conducted this Friday! "Shit I— I did not think about it! Billy... Billy's custody case will have no positive effect. Kiara, please tell me where are you!" The more he concentrated on the subject the worst it felt and eventually he prayed more and more to know that about her.

He would not have discussed that his prayers will indeed be answered and, he will get the opportunity to listen to her!

No sooner have he wished than at the exact time his cell rung with an unknown number. Although he was up with the same nonchalant behaviour to not take the call and let it ring however an undefined emotion attracted him. Raven hesitantly with annoyance unpocketed his phone.

It seemed to be a landline call from a telephone. "Hello!" He chipped only to get to hear a familiar noise of sighing he was very well aware of! "Kiara, is that— you?" it was still shocking to have her call using a telephone booth to call other than her personal phone yet his beliefs in that never died!

"How are you?" It hit him on the heart at the cold statement she spoke with a voice that sounded like the woman speaking lifelessly on a call that it is busy or switched off.

And top of that, it was unbelievable to expect such reply. For him, he thought she must be stuck in a problem and crying profusely albeit in the manner she talked seemed no good at all. “Are you crazy? Where the hell are you. I am dying to see you. Tell me where are you. I will come right away! Do you have any idea since when am I searching for yo—”

“Where is Billy!” She cut him off talking about the kid who missed her more than anyone else!

Raven wanted to scream on her, shout for going away not even before informing them. She knew Billy was badly attached to her and any separation would drown him in the condition he was earlier in. “How you expect him to be without you!” It would definitely have made her feel worse, thought Raven. “He is asking for you Kiara, he has aggravated his physical appearance.” There was too much to say and less to describe via speech.

It was shocking to know that she called that too in the middle of the night from somewhere he had no idea about that too talking very weirdly. But, it was just something he could not imagine if she had not given him the taste of real pain.

He sensed her sigh as if preparing to say something and when she did, he didn’t know what to react!

“Perhaps now you will realize how I survived without you Raven!” Dumbfounded with the statement, he connected the dots one by one yet unsure of it. So, her leave was not abrupt but it was preplanned. “Now perhaps seeing Billy will give you the idea how I suffered. I was as attached to you as your son is to me.”

Her speech turned out to be vulnerably heart breaking. It spoke of an unknown revenge, some hurt and a plan that was created to not only see him suffer but also his little kid who not even had any thought about all this. “Kiara! What are you talking I can’t get anything!” Hurt and pain was altered along every word.

He was on the edge of busting into tears and cry trying not to believe what his mind was throwing light on. His son was used as bait to take revenge for something he was guilty of. A kid who was being punished for his father’s past mistakes. “Don’t be so dumb Raven, I know you know what it is! The reality is in front of you!” Now he could catch the fury in her voice, she sounded angry and even her voice cracking. If it was difficult for her to say that than surely she was doing it by keeping a stone on her heart! Yet, why!

“ Kiara please, not to Billy. He will die. Please!” His emotions dripped in every word. His sobs were audible too. “Not for me but please for Billy, please come back for him. I am ready to take any punishment but pleaseeee don’t do this to my son... To our son.” She was getting pissed off with his emotional dramatic sentences.

Having felt her grumble on the other side, Raven heard her say, “ You dumb head Carter are you that stupid that you can’t see— IT WAS A PLAN. A PLAN TO TAKE MY REVENGE ON YOU! “ Her shout broke his hopes and him into the smallest fragments possible. “I never loved

you after you return but pretended it to win your faith. How can you even think that after doing so much worse to me I will get ready to marry for that mother fucker son of yours!"

It was not her language. She was not the Kiara he knew. She can never do this! "Now you will realize how it feels when someone you love leaves you for someone else. You will realize how I suffered without you. You will see with your eyes how it feels to be left out to cry and die. And you will see this all through Billy. Yes Raven, He will show you my condition because I was attached to you the way he was to me. And I wish he suffers more than me. Good bye Raven, hoping to never meet you again— dear fake husband." She ended her part of say with a mocking laugh.

With that the call disconnected leaving him baffled and defeated in the fits of cries. He didn't win that day when he decided to marry her for Billy but actually contracted his son's happiness to her only for ruining it someday.

Tbc...

Chapter 35. Alone

That night neither Billy got some peace nor his father!

After coming back home, raven was questioned too much regarding his role in the search. But he could give nothing more than a sarcastic smile all the time with bleeding eyes with painful tears of dejection and self destruction.

He was hollow from within. The organs were definitely working, but he could not keep them connected and help his body work. It was as if he was just a body that could breathe, cry and but cannot talk. He was just a human who has life and no objective in life, no family, no happiness and no peace!

The very first thing he did after getting into the abode was— rush to Billy room, sigh defeatedly near the door with a choking throat and almost run to pick him up in his arms. Raven cried loudly hugging him close that his cries made Billy to soften himself a little realizing how his father was broken.

He can really not get that all but as he hears his father cry hugging him close, he sobbed blinking his puffy eyes to see his father who cried more than him hence giving a halt to his cries. However, it did not stop the streaming tears and his sobs. Yeah, his daddy was broken but the little kid can't even describe what was going on with his him! How much he missed his mother than the others in this place.

"Raven please tell me what did you find! I very well can see your pain, is there something you found out about Kiara!" Mr. Carter sat next to him near the bed eyeing Billy's slumbering yet sobbing body hugged close by his father.

It has been long as ever his mother could recognize as to how long he sat there for hours. Neither he talked nor let anyone take Billy away. He just let his reckless tears to fall off while he stuck closer to his kid sitting in the corner of the bed before the side table.

"I don't know what is wrong with him Gerry! I tried to talk but he avoided me. He has Billy in his arms, please come home soon. I can't see him like that. Please come soon." Mr. Carter sobbed giving a glance to his son whilst standing near the window of the room.

She was confused how to behave or act in this situation. The day was more than a trauma itself. Firstly, her daughter in law went missing, she saw her poor grand kid crying behind her while his mother was nowhere to be found, cried seeing how the males of the family struggled to find her and now towards the approach of the night he got to see the worst— her son, who was as strong as an iron stature, crying like a loser all broken and shattered.

The day brought way tool many things for them!

"Mom!" Girard appeared.

Kelly Carter was sitting in the hall unable to see his sons lose their peace crying to herself there. She quickly got up pulling Girard's hand for a tight hug. "Ohh Girard, finally you came." Her tears soaked the fabric of his shirt making a small dried out pool on his tee dampening it.

Girard held her close breathing deeply. They were supposed to be strong— not for themselves but for Raven and Billy however this was something astounding to see. All the blocks of their house fell down breaking it into the smallest pieces. Their lives turned into a hollow space while the building that was once called to be home turned as silent as a graveyard in a day's time.

"Hey mom, what is wrong. You have to be strong. Come on tell me what's the matter!" Girard patted her back gently in order to bring her to some senses.

Kelly Carter was the kind of woman who has a soft delicate heart that bled even whilst watching emotional scenes in the television serials. How can she not cry and lose her peace when the things she saw happening someday on the TV happen to them in real life!

Mrs. Carter sobbed across his chest a last time before detaching away. She was taken care of by her responsible son. He immediately got her a glass of water and while she was made to drink it her husband and the strength of the house arrived, Mr. Carter.

He looked as tired as the others in the house. Uhh, may be more. The increased lines of worry on his face showed how disturbed he was. "What is wrong Kell! Why did you ask me to come at once! Everything fine! Did Raven— did Raven find out anything about Kiara." He sat on his knees near her legs caressing her arms.

The expressions on his face very well conveyed how badly he wished to get a positive reply and an answer that would help eradicate the days long tension his body feeling. Alas, life is not as sweet as the home made healthy cookies, it is a bitch that is notorious for its vulgar game of playing tricks on wrong people at wrong time!

He gulped his saliva at how his wife nod her skill negatively. "I wish I could tell you something pleading but I afraid it is not a good news on Raven's part!" It was now Girard's turn to erect his back nervously and swig watching his mother's facial expressions.

"Is he... Is he back!" Mr. Carter asked.

Not even has Mrs. Carter bobbed her head in yes that Girard got back on his feet running all the way stumbling to Billy's room and barging in. His sudden appearance frightened Billy in his sleep. He shook a little in his father's arms clutching onto the cloth of his tee possessively.

On the contrary as his son, Raven could do nothing than crying more and more whilst having seen Girard. He just shook his head from side to side as though attempting to tell him something.

His brother was clever enough to take his signs without having him say that in words. Sitting next to Raven quietly, he let the tear drops drip down while their parents walked in together with same grieved expressions on their faces. “You thought she will be the ray of hope in our battlefield showing us the right path Girard, but— She came only with objective of taking revenge.” It was shocking and awful.

They clearly did not know why was he saying that until, Raven laughed out loud with a hard cry. “ She just wanted to hurt me. She just wanted to hurt me for breaking up with her.” He absent mindedly stated shaking severely. “ And she— she took my son as a bait. He purposely came to our lives, to Billy’s life. Not to save him. Not to help him get through with him difficulties. She came here to pain me. Just to pain me.” He sobbed latching his lashes together tight.

Girard tried to explain to him the importance of keeping peace at moment. He was not ready to trust his words. For him, Kiara was as innocent as a new born infant who was not someone who can hurt anyone. She was as delicate as the petals of flowers and listening such allegations against her was not acceptable.

His parents seconded Girard however, their blind faith attached to the beautiful innocent Kiara came crashing down into fragments when Raven pulled his phone weakly as though he has a hard solid proof to held them wrong. And when he played the last call from the recorded calls list— where the calls are automatically recorded and saved in the memory of the phone, Mr. And Mrs. Carter along with Girard went silent feeling deceived.

That night, they sat together regretting the day they decided to include Kiara, his innocent ex-girlfriend in their family as his wife. As his fake contracted wife who doomed their hopes into ashes.

Tbc...

Chapter 36. Did I take too harsh decision in the name of revenge

Saturday, Morning,

'Famous heartthrob award winning billionaire Raven Carter, lose his kid's custody case to his ex-wife!'

The news was everywhere in the news channels by the evening soon after the hearing was made on Friday. The Saturday morning was fresh, I felt different. There was a no need to hurry and drive to somewhere else to see someone else's child.

I yawned getting up late in the morning, oh I mean, afternoon. I never had such an amazing night in these seven months after that day. It was only revenge that I felt, that I thought, that I kissed and that I desired about all the time after he got into my life back.

He thought he will use me and I will let him use myself innocently! Stupid Raven Carter. Haha.

Unfortunately, what he didn't know was that I was no more the old Kiara he knew. I have changed, changed right after I got that call informing me regarding his visit to my city after three years.

I still remember that early morning Friday eight months ago before Raven met me, when I was hurrying to go to my cheap job at the nearby place. I was late due to the overtime I did the other night to get some extra bucks so that I could pay my rent. There was not even a single grain of tea in the jar so that I could make some black tea for myself before leaving to work.

My condition was worse than a beggar. I was anyway going to leave when there came someone's knock on my door. I was alone, nobody never visited me. I was that person in the world who only had her apartment owner banging her door to demand his rent and chip some curses before leaving.

However, that day someone stopped by, from the past. Someone I hated the most for he showed me the reality, cruel reality of the world. "Payton!" there was awkwardness, nervousness as well as a strange feeling seeing him after a long time. Ugh, after five months I mean.

I never expected him to come and see me all of a sudden. He visited me often once in every four or five months so that he can change my decision and win me.

Yeah, I will not refuse he offered me job in his company that came under Top 5 leading companies in US, but a job that was more of a slut than a normal job between a boss and employee.

He offered me to be his secretary with benefits. Not even secretary actually but indirectly a mistress who was required to satisfy his lust during working hours anytime, anywhere.

“What brings you here!” After I opened the door with a dead expression clearly showing my disappointment as to how pissed off I was to see him on my doorstep, I stood aside letting him in for there was no way he would leave without boring me for an hour with his fake talks.

Regardless, what he told me this time was really shocking. I failed to believe it yet in the end when I saw the proofs he got me, I was left with no limit to trust on anything else. “My sources told me Raven might visit you in a day or two. His son’s custody case is in the court, and what I got to hear says that he wants you to marry him so that he can keep his son to himself.” My looks told him I was not interested in his talks for every time he came to me, he lied in order to get close to me.

But the good thing was, he never tried to force himself on me and that was what that let me in every time he came to my door. “I know you still love him and the instant noodles cup on the table there shows it you still love him unconditionally. That is why I have got you proof, see this.” He threw a set of papers on the table across me resting his head on the weak shaking headboard of my bed.

I could not speak, the pictures, the copy of divorce papers and the carbon copy of case study, submitted in the court regarding his son’s custody was in my hands. Although I knew he got married to Shania and has happily shifted to the flat he bought in Seattle for them. All Thanks to his father’s well known company and his reputation that the news channels showed every fucking clip of the wedding from beginning till the end.

But the news of him getting divorced to her was yet to be known.

I was thrilled at the revelation and frustrated when Payton informed me he was just coming to see me for his son. “I was told the advocate suggested to Raven that if he could bring a better mother for Billy then there are high chances to win the case.” That was the first time I heard the name of his son.

I had created an image of him in my head. Little Raven with a bit more stubbornness than his father. A baby who was as beautiful as a doll with a smile that could melt anyone.

However, the thing was, I never saw the channels talking about him and this confusion of mine was cleared by Payton, “Shania was in her initial stage of pregnancy when she started behaving maniacally, or I should say mentally. She is a psycho seriously I’ve had noticed that myself in the college. Anyway, Raven had to stay with her until she delivered the baby. Soon after the delivery was done, he immediately separated his son from her and since then they are fighting for his custody.”

I was not sure how to react. My life was going normal until he walked in unveiling something that was going to happen soon in my life. I wanted to scream, cry and kill the heck of this idiot who revealed the coming occasions of my life.

For a second, I was happy that the guy I loved more than my life was going to come back and see me. Three years have passed ever since we separated, I never heard about anything else than him everywhere I'd go. I was excited to see him, but he was not coming here to see me the way I wanted to meet him. It was for a motive— a selfish motive.

"If you want then I can help you file a case on him. In this way he will not only be held culprit for bothering you but also will he lose his son's custody. It will be win win case for you, what's say should I call my lawyer!" As usually he was attempting to persuade me, it was one of those failed tricks that was never going to work on me.

He might have come here to help me take my revenge on him but, I refused to let him go so easily. "No, I don't want to file any case against him rather I will do as he would ask me to." Payton was astounded over my statement.

His objective for coming here and letting me know everything was to earn my attention nevertheless, he didn't know that he fuelled up the years old hurt within me turning it into my aggression. And that is how, my time began. My time of taking revenge!

After a hot shower listening to my favourite song I descended the stairs. "Morning sexy, ohh damn if that's because you want to kill me, know that I am already dead." I let out a laugh pulling out a chair on the breakfast table providing that he raised his hands in defeat. "No trust me, I am still waiting for you to say a yes to me baby. Payton Scott is all dead!" he added sipping his morning tea.

I enjoyed his attention. He cannot take away his eyes from my body and the tight one piece I wore. "So what's there in the newspaper today!" honestly wanting to listen something about him I impatiently waited while one of the servants served me hot black coffee with mushroom cheese sandwiches.

It was preplanned that after playing my last trick in the game I would take shelter in Payton's mansion in Las Vegas for a time being so that Raven doesn't have any idea where I am. In fact, the morning I decided to disappear from his bungalow, it was Payton only who personally came to visit me and took the pains to bring me here via his private jet.

"The news you badly wished to hear! See this." He threw a set of newspapers of different publishers near me as I was sitting three chairs away from him on the table maintaining my distance from him.

It was obvious he will not do anything against my will yet my heart did not allow me to say him yes for the marriage proposal he made some three months ago when we secretly met in the

supermarket discussing about my further plan. He was the only one I relied on throughout this while.

“Hmm what is that news, let me see!” As excitedly as I flipped from one newspaper to another to read articles on Raven, my fingers sweated as I felt a sharp pain in my heart while my eyes met with the pictures printed in the papers. “Billy!” Feeling dizzy with a thumping heart I gasped seeing Billy’s pictures where he was in Shania’s arm looking back at Raven and his family with stretched out hands crying badly while she was walking ahead with his guards.

“So, isn’t that satisfying to see! That mother fucker’s kid is back to his psycho mother who will take no more than a few months to send him to his grave.” Having him remark that, I forced my lips trying hard not to cry and smile at his words however, all I felt was pain and agony while little Billy’s crimson crying face flashed in my head.

Did I take too harsh decision in the name of revenge!

Tbc...

Chapter 37. New feelings

Excusing myself from the breakfast table I came back to my room. Why do should I feel bad about for his son! He was nobody to me. I just happened to be there in that house with him only because I wanted to execute my revenge.

And Billy, he was the primary target. It was decided ever since the beginning that I will get close to him such that it is difficult for anyone else to handle him in my absence. And when the right time comes, I would leave him so that he suffers gradually becoming an integral reason behind Raven's suffering.

But why do I feel so strange? Why is he sad flushed red face affecting me! I didn't decide to be his mother forever. Why would I! He was not even my flesh. I was any other step mother for him who hurt him as it shows in the movies.

Agreed he was a good company, I liked to spend time with him taking his care and seeing to it, he always followed my words although it wasn't out of affection. Rather, it was pure aggression, the fury of pain in those years while his father was enjoying life on the other end.

Kiara, you need to stop thinking about him. Don't forget his father only wanted to marry you for a reason. He did not make you sign marriage papers but a contract in the name of it. You are not liable if his son dies or lives in pain. You were and are alone like you were always.

Determining strongly to not think about him or his tears any more, I strode down to the floor once again. This time with a new Zeal and excitement putting on my face. "You seem different! What is that babe!" I sat next to him on the couch while he flipped through the pages of the file in his hands.

Payton was a flirt with uncountable relationships with women. Yet he never forgot to take his work seriously. In the last two years he reached to the third position in terms of success from the seventh number. On the other hand, Carter automobiles, Raven's company reduced to the number two from one in the same span of time.

If he will keep working like this then in coming years, he will be the number one entrepreneur with successful business prevailing in the market. "Hmm don't you think we need to go on a trip?" He froze looking at my face curiously.

I let out a chuckle at his expressions. Obviously, it was something to be curious about as I never offered him to go somewhere with me. "If that is to divert me from my work then no, I won't let you do that." He huffed concentrating in his file again.

Was he really trying to avoid me? Gosh, I cannot trust this side of him. Despite being slapped innumerable times by me or for that matter getting kicked in the groin too, he never stopped

his deeds of flirting with me. Although today seeing him so dedicated towards his works whilst giving no damn to me, I felt so proud of him humorously.

“Uhh if you don’t want to go then I don’t mind. I will find someone on my way.” I feigned to not seem joking as I checked through my phone.

Honestly I had no good contact list that I can look up to anytime of the day since it was hard to trust anyone. Even today I don’t trust Payton in terms of friendship as I have seen him doing things to break my relationship with Raven in the college.

‘Then why are you sitting with him if you don’t trust him!’

Flaring my nose neglecting at what my heart remarked I focused back on the conversation I was indulged in with Payton. I know I still have trust issues but I can blindly say he is not the guy who will do anything wrong to me.

If he ever wanted to sleep with me, (that is what I have thought every time he approached me) then he would have forced me already. I have seen him more than anybody else over these years. “Ehh you really want to go out? Then, how can I say no to a beautiful woman like you. You are the nymph I want to own to myself.” I let him snake his arms around my waist and caress my cheek.

It was awkward to get so close to him with our chests colliding. However, I managed to shove away the ineptitudeness trying to look this moment in other way around— positively. And as I saw his face clearly I busted into fits of laughter eventually that forced him to move away quizzically.

He gave me my time staring my face with a cocked eyebrow and crossed arms. I can sense he somewhere anticipated what I was going to chip next, “Try as long as you can Payton but I don’t get that ‘Seducing’ feeling around you! And your pickup lines, gosh.” I held my chest laughing hard while he rolled his eyes looking away.

He is not that bad. I was wrong that I always noticed his bad side. He can be a good friend, perhaps a good husband too. “ That wasn’t a pick up line! It came out of my heart just for you. I never called any other women a nymph than you, because you actually are!” He sounded so innocent, his frowned face reminded me of Billy who behaved like this every time I would avoid him and concentrate on something else.

This vanished the smile from my lips. Again his teary eyes reverted in my brain as though that had to be the only thing to focus on.

Shit Kiara, not again. Don’t just let his face affect you. Don’t even think about him. He was never your priority. Let him be the way he is!

“Hey, where are you lost?” I swigged my reverie breathing a sigh.

He came forward caressing my arms from both the side gently while I stared him blankly. Why was he caring so much for me! "Again them? Ain't it?" On understanding where was I lost, Payton annoyingly pursed his lips moving aside.

Turning around his back on me he crossed his arms. I can sense he was disappointed. I promised him that after coming back from there I will never think of him or his son. "I was just zoned out. Anyway come on, let's go to some restaurant." In order to distract his mind, I announced pulling his arm.

I awkwardly smiled watching his eyes that sent chills down my neck. They were darkly glaring me like I committed a crime. "Kiara." He huffed placing his hands on his side with a heave of sigh. "I know you know I am serious about you. Agreed I am someone who cannot be trusted as I have had infinite relationships with infinite women but, I hope you can very well see my efforts. If you think I will appreciate you for thinking about them again and again even after leaving them behind than I am sorry, I am not doing this all out of nothing. I really want to win your trust no matter what. Trust me I want to spend my life you."

I have no idea what to speak ahead. He was not imposing his feelings on me, yet I felt it that way. Why not, a guy won't favour a girl unless he wants anything in return. And he wants me as his life partner. It is not a bad idea though!

Raven is my past, whatever we had lies in past now as I have moved on finally. Perhaps, Payton can be the guy I was looking for, a life partner. Who says people can't change! May be, there is more to explore in him just that I need to spend time with him.

"Payton let's not talk about this now. I have just moved on from my past, give me sometime." I lowered my head feeling heck uncomfortable. He surely is correct but still I need time to get over this.

I can feel his eyes back on me, yet he did not speak anything. Hearing him let out a sigh I bit my lips. What if I cannot make any decision? He will be heartbroken. I literally don't want to be the reason behind that for I know it pains badly to be deceived by someone who you gave all your time but in the end they just give you rejection.

"Pack your stuff we are going to Serbia, the famous 'Know you love It funfair' of winter is waiting for us." As soon as I shot my head up to see him, I found him smiling cutely at me. "Yeah better you pack more of woollen clothes than this seducing piece." He chuckled eyeing my one piece again with a smirk.

Why on earth didn't I see his good side before? Perhaps, I would have been the luckiest girl otherwise!

Tbc...

Chapter 38. Too good to be real.

“So how are you now? I hope I helped you forget them from your head to some extent?” Forcing a smile in reflex I crossed my legs sitting comfortably in the seat.

The buckle was discomfiting my posture. We were sitting in his private jet moving our ways to Serbia for the fair he mentioned, what was that? Uh I don't clearly remember it. But any ways I heaved a sigh looking out of the window. “Hmm, almost.” I lied adoring the foggy clouds those seemed nothing more than accumulation of smoke together that formed them.

The azure sky running heavenly with the white clouds made my heart flutter. The world seemed beautiful from all the sides. Be it the scenic beauty of the lands or the heavenly exquisiteness of the clouds and the majestic aura of the lovely view. I have never seen something like this ever before.

I wonder have he or anyone like him who frequently travels in air planes have ever taken a moment to adore them! “These clouds, they are so beautiful. Have you ever wondered what made the almighty to create them?” I spoke that more to myself as it was a mere whisper.

When I craned my skull in my left since we both preferred to sit away from each other despite having empty seats beside, I saw how badly he was engrossed in his tablet making it clearer for me that he didn't listen anything. “Payton! Have you ever noticed how beautiful the sky is?” my tone was certainly loud that awfully brought him back to the plane from his internet land.

His cute smile curved a smile on my lips too. Well earlier that smile was irking and more or less I desired to smash his head so that I could never see his smile again nathless never knew it will one day become the best smile on anyone's face and that I would like it so much!

Having kept aside his tab and earplugs, Payton sat across on the seat such that his arm was resting on the seat's back while his back on window on his behind. The way he smiled I can tell he was kind of happy that I initiated a talk between us. “Nah, I never found it interesting. What else can you anticipate from a person whose half life has gone seeing this colourless sky from the window.” As expected as it was, he chortled scratching his nape sheepishly with a grin.

This duffer does not know how lucky he is. He grew up in a wealthy family where the only means they preferred to travel was airways. Unlike me, who grew up in an orphanage where we passed our days cleaning the premises of the building and the nights by eating half a bowl porridge with a slice of apple or any other fruit.

Looking at the sky and the flying planes above head, we would wonder all together that someday we will also travel up there and explore the picturesqueness of the world from above. But with the passing time we all separated and now we do not have any thought about each other.

Some were adopted, some transferred to different orphanages that offered them good education while some like me departed after completing the school to take care of our living on our own independently. "So what about you! Do you like them." He asked intently gazing my face and body.

His eyes never diverted from my face and the reason was my smile. The fact that I was wearing his favourite colour (dark redwood) made him look more at me. "Yeah, what else can I tell you than a simple Yess. Growing up as an orphan I desired to see much more than this." It was not required to narrate everything in detail.

If he claims he loves me then I am sure he knows that well my life was more than a hardship. He learned the half of me during college times, the rest he must have done in these years. My emotional eyes conveyed too much. Our eyes locked when I turned my head to shoot him a glance.

He can see the hidden wishes I had and have. A sympathetic grin crept on his mouth while we continued to stare each other. I don't know why he seems so opposite of what he was in college. "I promise when we get together, I will bring all your dreams to life." That was more than enough.

At least he thought he will. Nobody never thought for me. His extraordinarily lenient behaviour was impressing my guts. I fear I might fall for his attempts soon if this goes on!

We sat in silent after that. Neither of us opened our mouths to strike any conversation further. I respect him for giving me the space and not trying to dig in further. Moreover, I am grateful to him that he did not ask me anything about my stay at Raven's house.

He didn't even asked me what we did in these past months together. The cool breeze from the air conditioner slapped my skin turning it cold. I rubbed my arms resting my head on the window locking my gaze with the beauty outside. "Take this you might be cold." He was standing on my side with his blazer.

After asking my permission with his eyes he affectionately put that around my body making sure he doesn't touch me anyway. "Thanks Payton." My eyes were tired. Even though I woke up in the afternoon I felt the need to fall back to sleep. I don't feel lively these days!

My eyes were shut when I sensed something soft pressing on my forehead. "Sleep. You seem exhausted." Wait! Did he just peck my forehead! As soon as I unlatched my lashes to see him, he was already back to his seat engrossed in his tablet while the air pods plugged back in his ears.

Am I dreaming or is that even reality that the guy I hated and cursed always was caring for me! I must be hallucinating!

Tbc...

Chapter 39. Date

When my eyes unlatched I found myself in an amusing well ventilated, high class room with lavish furniture. The walls were painted with soft maroon colour and flooring of white tiles intrigued my imagination. The room was as good as I could ever imagine in my dreams.

Everywhere my pupil stayed, all I can see was something unique very well conveying that the room was located in a seven star expensive hotel! I was in the bed comfortably covered with the thick feathery quilt. Payton must have brought me here while I was asleep.

He can be such a gentleman! I never knew it.

Slipping out my body from the covers as I stepped down, the skin of my feet came in contact with a feathery floor mat with white fur as if it was made with feathers. I slightly brushed my feet over it making my hair into a bun. The lights emitting in the room made it hard for me to understand whether it was still day or evening.

With soft cozy steps taken ahead as I moved near the big balcony, I pushed aside the curtains, “Wow! That is— indescribable!” I rubbed my arms batting my lashes at the heart soothing scenario in the front. It was evening, and I cannot describe its beauty.

The starry sky made my stomach to flutter. May be because Billy loved it! He would stand near the floor to ceiling long balcony placing his little palms on the transparent glass and stare out at the sky for hours until I would pull him to my arms and take him down!

Ugh, why can't I get his images out of my head. Why do I keep on thinking about him. He was not even my own son that, I had to feel this way. Does this mean, I am missing him?....

‘Yes, you do. You miss his antiques. You miss his voice, you miss his inaudible accent and his cute way of calling you mamma. You miss caring for him!’

No, that is not true!

I do not miss him at all. I really don't.

I respect the decisions I made thinking about my heart first but here, I am not wrong. My heart is. It does not want to accept the tyrannies I had seen in life under his absence in the last years. But on the other hand, it wants to support that cruel fake contracted husband of mine!

“Hey lovely lady!” I jumped in my spot feeling a pair of hands encircle around my waist. “Hmm let me guess it? You had a great sleep. And now you want to go and explore the Capital city?” I smiled as he said resting his chin on my shoulders.

I was having a great time standing under his cage of arms. His embrace was uncomfortable. I never had let any other guy touch me like this before. In the past as well as till last week, it was

only Raven who got that close to me. "So do you want to go to the fair tonight only or shall we go to a good beach side candlelight dinner?" His words set my body on fire.

I hugged my arms placed over his on my stomach silently. It was damn unnerving. Shit, I cannot stand in his arms. I don't feel good. Something is stopping me, Uhh, my heart does not want to get this strange feeling.

"Uhh Payton!" It almost came out of my mouth like a gasp while I worked on the locks of his fingers. Pulling apart his arms I stepped out trying to compose myself. "Uhm, I..." There were no words to say anything.

Even I don't know what was I feeling! I like his actions, his behaviour but when it comes to sharing space together with him in his arms, I cannot take that. It seems like my ethics are not allowing me. WHY! Why cannot I do that.

Why do I have to feel like this!

I know I am here with him for a purpose. I want to move on in my life but this, does not sound or seem correct! "Uhh Payton I am—" I still fidgeted with my speech looking down. I don't know what was going on with me? Why is this happening! It was my freaking decision to move on after taking my revenge but now, it all looks very difficult.

"Uhh, Kiara I just got a message from my friend who stays here, You get ready, I will come and take you out somewhere. Meanwhile— I will just go and greet him." He feigned to type something on the phone while saying that to me.

I thankfully gazed him as he just smilingly walked out. Before closing the door on his back, he gave me a flying kiss with a wave of hand. It was cute. He is so respectful then why my heart is not letting me take a decision.

"Shit! I swear you will be the death of me Kiara! I am just getting madder and madder looking at you." Exclaiming with a flushed face adoring a helpless smile, he shyly bit his small finger like a kid.

Awww, that was so cute. My Billy does the same!

Wait! He is not my Billy. Why can't this stupid heart understand this simple thing straight!

"Hey, are you alright! Don't tell me you are sleepy again!" I sighed blankly sensing a tug on my wrist.

When I was really in my mind, I realized our fingers were locked together and the cool winds tickled our faces. His humorous behaviour helped me forget Billy.

I forgot to describe the context!

We were standing alongside the shore of the beach house that he told me was supposed to be our first place for staying, however he had to change it. Reason, untold. Just that he mentioned, we will surely visit this house from the inside after I would tell him yes!

Any ways, he asked for my hand and helped me sit in the chair placed across a circular table decorated with delicacies. There were fragrant candles in the surrounding hanging in mid air over the circular frame of wooden blocks that was decorated with white and pink ribbons and balloons. "Dedicating this night to the loveliest lady I know!" He kissed my knuckles serving me the food in the plate.

Uhhh, he's so charming!

Tbc...

Chapter 40. Confused mind

“Kiara, this is for you!” Payton sat on his knees in a position as though proposing me.

Indeed, he has a ring in his hand with that hopeful expressions on his face that said he was upto something. “I know you are still in the phase of considering my proposal but would you like to accept my chocolate ring, made with a hundred percent pure Belgium chocolate!” chuckling at his words I saw the crowd pointing at him.

Some whispered that he was the famous entrepreneur who was growing as a businessman rapidly while others adoringly watched as he passed the ring to me. “ Please don’t say no otherwise my heart that is like this chocolate ring— will melt in sadness” I don’t think even he had any thought as to what was he speaking.

People stood in their places admiring us and eagerly waiting to see what will be my answer to his proposal while some removed their cellphones to capture this moment and obviously post on their blogs as to how the popular businessman fell on his knees to propose an unknown girl who was never seen in his arms before as his recurring girlfriend!

I quickly leaned in attacking at the ring and smacked at it until it was inside my mouth. “Come on, let’s go.” I walked ahead as the crowd busted into chuckle watching his expressions and my unbelievable movement.

It has been four weeks to our stay in Serbia. The fair we had come here for, ended in the first week only, but he insisted on staying here with me for more time. Payton was doubtful of me. He thinks after we leave this country and go back to our normal lives, I will turn his proposal down and start a new life as an individual again that he strongly opposes.

He wants us to stay together, if it takes us to be friends, he is fine, but he does not want me to go back anywhere. “That was so cruel, you don’t care for my feelings at all.” I stopped in my tracks putting on a serious face.

Yeah, true somewhere. I am only wasting our time. I cannot get onto any conclusion as to what do I want in life. Whatever I wanted few weeks ago, I left it behind on my back and moved on. “ Hey I am sorry if that sounded rude, I was just trying to be joyous.” He apologized seriously and all the way more concerned face that showed how much he cared for me.

The more I spend time with him the harder it is gets to neglect him. I would love to start my new life with him but I fear he will also behave like Raven and leave me in the middle of the journey and go ahead for another woman.

“No you need not be, I was just thinking about something.” I can see he was not convinced with what I said as I clearly lied yet he smiled looking down. He was trying to maintain his cool.

“Ehh, balloons! I like balloons.” I faked a squeal pointing the man who was standing near a cotton candy store with colourful balloons.

It made Payton to look back at where I pointed and smile like his own self. “You like balloons?” He inquired, I hurriedly shake my head in yes and the next moment what I realized was that he was on his way to the balloon seller already.

He is such a gem. I will be an idiot to reject him! Everyone has a bad habit and roaming around with five girls in a single day was one of his bad habits. He has changed. It was impressive to learn that he had broken all his ties with his old girl friends and for now he is attempting in impressing me.

“What the!” it was next to impossible to hold back my laughs. “Is he kidding me?” I looked away laughing to myself in daze.

While Payton was paying him the expense, I looked around at the people who were intriguingly seeing his madness. He literally bought all the balloons from the seller. Those balloons are not less than fifty or sixty, and he literally bought all of them.

“Why?” I asked him with the action of my arms while he initiated his walk back to me having that stock of cool and colourful balloons dancing with the winds. “Payton, you are crazy!” Chortling surprisingly I hit him on the chest as he stood straight in front of me with a protection of bouncing and dancing balloons in the air.

He curtsied respectfully whilst forwarding the string of the balloons to me saying, “I will do anything for you. Buying balloons is not a big deal, in fact I have planned to buy a whole circus for our going to be kids.” My tongue was in my throat dry while he smirked at me with a wink.

See!!! I have not even decided what to do and how to tell him a yes and there he has already done his part of family planning! I cannot do anything more than looking down with blush. He proudly stood next to me whistling out on his victory.

I don’t know but it felt good when he said that. At least, there is someone who is actually planning something for our kids other than planning to marry me for his beforehand born son who needs mother!

Shit, I went too far! I should not be saying this. Not for Billy. No matter how much I try to hate him because of Raven, I cannot. I have explored my motherly emotions that felt contented around him. Billy is that child which every mother desires to have. A cute, doll like naughty baby who obeys no one else but his mother.

“Hey, don’t tell me you are imagining how would we make babies!” I sensed him snap his fingers across my eyes eventually breaking my bubble of thoughts. “Well let’s get going. I know there is still fucking more time to get into that phase of life where I will fertilize your eggs and impregnate you.” He uttered with a cluck of tongue pulling my wrist along as he walked ahead.

Tbc...

Chapter 41. His agonies.

Life is not easy. Not at all if you ask someone like Kiara whose life has always been a hardship filled with drawbacks and obstacles. However, it will not be wrong to compare her life with little Billy though. Even though it has hardly been two stupid fucking damn years to his existence yet whatever he has gone through counts more than what Kiara has experienced in life.

Both suffered the same. Immense love, depended on somebody who gave no shit to their feelings and gradually in the end saw a cruel heart break that left them to no grounds. Yet again, if their sorrows are measured, it will be realized Billy suffered more.

At least Kiara knew that the person she loved, she was dependent on will never come back after they left, albeit poor Billy was yet confused and hopeful that one day his Mamma would come back to him and love him like the old times.

“Stop it Billy! Can’t you just shut your ass hole mouth and eat this in silence!!!” He cried louder every time Shania popped out her eyes gripping his delicate arms tight and making him sit in her lap. “Stop crying! It’s intolerable, please. Shut up and eat this.”

She was though trying to be a good mother alas, “Mamma!” He pointed there toward the door requesting her who was his biological Mamma to bring his that Mamma who left him during the darkness of the night hours. “Mamma!” he wriggled strongly in her lap turning her red in grouchiness.

Shania kind of aggressively made him sit on the bed holding his arms together in her clutch. “I am your Mamma, did you get that Billy! I am your Mamma.” She shouted that even the poor kid jumped in his place, suck in a deep breath before he let out severe whimpered cry throwing his body on the bed while got fresh tears made their ways out of his eyes.

He twisted and turned on the bed kicking his legs in the air, slapped his hands on the mattress screaming his lungs out. He whined stubbornly alas there was no one to listen to his cries except Shania who was as mad as he himself, as in the sense of stubbornness.

She sat on the edge of the bed with crossed arms. The bowl of porridge skipped down the edge thus breaking into pieces while the matter spread out on the carpet. Billy continued to whimper on his energy while his mother perilously stared him.

If stares could stab someone then now, Billy would have been lying amidst an ocean of his own blood, dead. Thankfully it was not going to happen never! Any which ways after having had enough of his whines, Shania pulled him up in her arms like a broken fractured doll and deadly growled, “Cry as much you want, but get that, that you are not going anywhere. I am your

Mamma and I will be.” No sooner have she finished her statement than Shania placed him back on the bed to cry while she herself walked out of the bed.

“Handle him, make him eat something and take him to his room.” Shania ordered the nanny who was appointed for Billy.

“And if he throws his tantrums, just let him be and leave!” Shockingly nodding in yes the nanny undid the knob of the door while there, Shania scurried away fuming in anger.

Hurrying with long footsteps as the nanny came to the bed, she picked up the abandoned little baby who was silent now. His eyes still watered while his little sobs brought tears in her eyes. “Ohh my baby! Please, no no no. Please don’t.” Her elderly voice gave a sense as to how experienced the woman was.

Her black and pepper hairs that was designed in a low bun spoke how well was she in her work. Her quivering hands that hugged Billy close to her chest showed how many children she might have handled in her entire life!

She let her tears flow down on her cheeks whilst patting Billy’s back. He was breathing abnormally and his partially closed eyes ran wet with streaming hot tears. “You’re so little baby! Ohh lord, what is his sin? Why are you punishing this little soul like this. What wrong has he done?” The nanny faced the ceiling taking out her grudges toward the God.

She squeezed her lashes together feeling the poor kid’s pain. Four weeks, four fucking weeks, and he has been crying like this asking for his mamma. However, the least idea did he had was that he was being deprived of a mother’s love.

“Look at him, he is so small. But his pains, his sufferings are bigger than the life he has lived so far. Can’t you just give him a good mother?” She disgustingly glared the ceiling breathing heavily.

There was nothing she can do in this matter rather than complaining. Even if she wished, she was helpless. Not only was he taken away from his father where he was a little happy but also he was abandoned by that cruel fake mother of his who did not even think for a second before taking such a big decision!

“Mamma” Muttering continuously in a semi conscious condition Billy blinked his eyes being on the verge of falling asleep.

The helpless nanny shrieked seeing his vulnerable condition. “I am there for you sweetie, if not your real mother. I may not be able to love you like that heartless woman whom you are crying for, that bitch, who left you behind after getting you addicted to her but I will do whatever I can for you.” She kissed his hairs longingly. Her lips adored his red face lovingly providing that his tears wetted her lips.

When the salinity of the tears kissed her tongue, she pulled him close helplessly cursing Kiara who happened to be the ground behind his destruction. Not only his, but also his father who has vanished after losing the custody case. “Ohh my dear God, help this kid. Please do something for him. Please, help him recover from this loss!” She hiccuped that her voice cracked and throat choked.

She slowly made Billy lay down in his bed followed by covering him with his little duvet. Her fingers lovingly caressed his head while her heart prayed to the almighty to show some mercy on this little soul before it was late. She lost herself in his innocence unaware of the reality that— indeed God heard her voice.

Tbc...

Chapter 42. Worried for him.

“Billyyyyy!!!”

Kiara woke up screaming maniacly in the bed. Her face glistened with sweat and eyes with accumulating tears.

Her uneven breaths resulting into panicking pants pulled Payton toward them at an instant. “Kiara! Wh-what happened!” he had to barge in the room mentally armed with weapon for the way she screamed it felt she was in utmost danger!

He sat on the edge of the bed switching on the lights as she was sitting blankly under the dark room with heavy breaths looking nowhere particularly but in the thin air as her tears finally lost count and fell off her lashes. “Kia—” He cannot even finish speaking her name that she jumped into his arms hiding in there from all the haunting problems.

Her head rubbed against his chest while Kiara bit the cuff of her sleeve sobbing soundly in his arms. “I.. I... Payton... I saw Billy with her. She will kill... Kill him... Like... Like... Her daughter... He is... Not... Not safe with her!” It was real hard to comprehend her accent and understand what was she trying to say.

It took him a good minute to replay her words all over again in his head in order to learn what was bothering her! Although Payton felt bad that she was here on a trip with him where she was reckoned to not think about him or father, but he had to maintain his cool.

Her dishevelled appearance showed how badly disturbed she was and how much he craved for his presence beside her.

“Hey Kiara, you... You need not worry... He is not in danger. He is with his mother, and she will take care of him. She is his mother, hmm!” His fingers crawled in her hairs giving her light stroke.

To his calmness, it somewhere helped her gather herself however her next set of words was damn unexpected, both to him as well as her. “No Payton! You do not know her, she will kill Billy. She has killed his twin sister in the bath tub and now it might be Billy. Payton please, please let’s do something or else she will kill my son. She will kill my son, I need to go and save him!”

She seemed off track. Her unanticipating comportment left him to baffle in confusion. What did just happen to her so on the spur of the moment? They had good dinner few hours ago and also a good romantic couples dance where Payton made sure, he impressed her to quarter of the requirement.

Even so, this kind of demeanour was unbelievable!

“Gather yourself Kiara!!!” She was about to leave the bed and him, and run to the door notwithstanding, he pulled her in his arms shaking her shoulders aggressively such that even her hairs became messy. “What are speaking? Billy is not your son, you are not his mother! It should not affect you if he is not safe or in danger!!!”

She turned mute and motionless. Her pupils stilled on his face with slightly parted lips as her eyes closely watched when he annoyingly attempted to knock some sense in her head. “Do not forget Kiara, meeting Billy and getting close to him was just a part of your plan! You never intended to become his real mother, did you?” Siding her hair from covering her gloomy shocked face, Payton constantly stroked her arm.

It was obvious from her locution she was just zoned out. Her uneven blinking of lashes said she did remember what was it supposed to be? A plan, an executed plan where it was clearly decided she had to get closer to her cruel ex boyfriend’s son and leave him when once he is attracted to her and it is impossible for him to live without her.

And even, they did the same! Yet, seeing a nightmare where that so called son of hers was being tortured by his psycho mamma, the mother in her could not keep herself back. “If you really want then I can get his information just for you. But please, stay calm.” No matter why was she so disturbed, Payton cannot overlook it as it becomes his matter of concern too.

Her unbalanced face gets him agitated and gradually it gets obdurate to congregate on his own life because— she is his life now!

Anyway, as Payton partially rose from the edge of the bed to leave, Kiara clutched his wrist not letting him go. He politely obliged her and sat back in his spot smiling at her genuinely. “No, don’t go anywhere please!” She barred him from going.

He was correct, it’s just a part of a plan. Billy was just a part of a plan, it is not her solicitude whether he lives or dies! She thought indeed the same and any which ways forced her heart to agree with her. “Sure!” Payton plumed a brow giving her an opportunity to withdraw her words and let him do the needful.

But much to his tranquillity she nodded in yes, nonchalantly. “Think about it one more time Kiara, I don’t want to see you worried in the morning. I know you had a great relationship with him perhaps, knowing about his condition will give you some peace!” He suggestively specified.

Don’t know why but her expressions said she wished to know about him yet her words reinstated something else. Payton calmly sat there for her as she has clutched his hand into a protective grip not giving him any chance to move even a bit.

It was damn likeable yet keeping in mind the conditions he perched in his place staying as her support system. “I... I am... I think I want to sleep more.” Kiara confusingly said shoving her hand in the air back and forth. “Uhh, would you mind switching the lights off, I Want. To. Go. To. Sleep.” She uttered every word taking a seconds pause in the middle.

Her eyes hurriedly latched with the sheets on the bed not daring to look in his eyes. She never feared to look him in the eyes ever before than now! She can perspicuously see how he caught her red handed lying and jumping from her emotions to stubbornness.

Her mind refused to trust his eyes, they never made her feel so uncomfortable in that way. Not in the wrong sense obviously but, she never imagined Payton.... The guy who irked her all the time will catch not only her lies but also her, in the times like this where she was still confused what to do in life now!

“Hmm okay as you say, call me if you need my help. I am always available at your service, ma’am!” He curtsied professionally as if he has been doing that all his life before switching the lights off.

Kiara can finally heave the breath that stuck in her throat seeing such an adorable Payton doing his best to woo her. “Stupid!” She shook her head excitingly whilst spreading the quilts back on her body.

As soon as she closed her eyes thanking Payton for his generosity, her eyes yet again shone with Billy’s crying faces. ‘Hope he is fine!’ She mumbled to herself hugging the covers tight.

Tbc...

Chapter 43. Shocked

Afternoon went by like the blink of an eye, the generous atmosphere soothed hearts with its amusing view. Even the magnificent appearance of the gentlemen during a lunch with Payton in the famous restaurant of Siberia proved out to be real amazing.

“I will be right back.” Payton smiled with a nod as Kiara excused herself from there moving toward the wash room.

Her smile vanished soon as she entered the doors and sighed looking at her reflection in the mirror. “Gosh!” having rested her hands on the slab of the basin across staring her reflection in the mirror, Kiara pressed her lips tiringly.

Last night was damn disturbing, she could not focus on anything— not even on her breakfast. The flashes of Billy’s face was stabbing her heart. She wished to see him, just for once but yeah... Any ways, just to get a glimpse of him.

And to beguile her, he offered Kiara to accompany him to a lunch with his new clients. Although she hated the idea as it did not please her at all. How can he take any random girl to a lunch meet where important clients were going to be present. It could affect his business!!!

She tried her best to make him understand that notwithstanding, who can convince Payton Williamson! He very well put forth his point that, “My clients are no saints. One of them is coming with his two mistresses on lunch. Can you believe that! And here I am insisting my college crush to accompany me!” He proudly mentioned giving her no room to say anything else.

Never mind, after setting her hair properly and adjusting her white jeans, Kiara forced a smile before she unlatched the door and left. “Hey!” she was greeted by her new yet old stubborn admirer who stretched out a hand for her to accept it and settle down in the seat next to his.

He gave the impression of being hackneyed with a tiresome sigh escaping his lips. “Why do you look so dead!” Kiara twittered playfully slapping his bicep with a raised eyebrow.

In reflex, she was lightly pulled toward the side of his seat with a dead look. “Don’t ask me anything! Like seriously!” Payton entwined their fingers playing with her bracelet. It was clear there was something that occurred right after her leave and that happened to be the cause behind his annoyance.

“They— are not the real clients. But the proxies appointed by them. The real clients are on their way to come. They just sent the proxies to make sure we are fit for their investment! Like are you kidding me? They successfully wasted our time like this.” He flared his nose looking at the man in the front engrossed with his mistresses on the either side.

The other man who has attended this meet with the other man, sat attacking the grilled chicken in his place giving no fuck to the reason they were present there for. Lol.

It was indeed a matter to be concerned on however, Kiara only laughed.

So basically the clients he was praising fooled him by sending proxies on their behalf. He innocently gazed her with light pout that only pumped up her laughter skills. Kiara lowered her head trying not to be noticed by the men and the two mistresses brought along by one of them.

She breathed deeply in order to compose herself while saying, "Okay, so are they even coming?" she asked amidst her chuckles that she struggled to keep a hold on. "I am just asking so that we don't have to sit here and see their faces." she saw them who were seriously displeasing. She wondered how can 'His important clients' take up such stupid people for proxies.

They, from no angle looked like professionals with experience but more like sexually aroused people who wished to be offered a room and plenty of time to enjoy in there. Surreally, the clients have to be ninnyes to appoint them! No, seriously mad people, will be a good way to describe them.

"Yes, they are on their way. And the intriguing part is— I don't know anything about them. They have recently launched a new product which is already ruling the markets. That is liked by the customers. I just want to collaborate with them, anyway!" Payton said.

It was a real issue now. In the morning, she would not have thought the lunch meet he was bent on taking her at, will come out like this. Funny, will be the correct word to describe this moment. Indeed, it was funny because the clients Payton was eager to sign contracts with, were unidentified by him, and they never worked before. Just that he was impressed by the new product launched by them and wanted to collaborate. Really, it was funny as heck!

Moreover, she was shocked to see how stupid he was! He never saw them but still wants to work with them just because their new product was in demand.

"So, where are they. When will they be here?" Kiara asked hesitantly stroking the back of his palm. It made Payton to stare her blankly with dumbstruck eyes.

Seeing his unmoving gaze on her face she quickly moved away her hand only to have it pulled back in the same position as it was earlier. "Don't stop! I like that." He smiled insisting her to resume that again.

Finally, after a little awkwardness as she continued to caress his rough skin with her light plummy touch, Payton proceeded further. "I just talked to this guy—" he pointed the tall man across him engrossed with his mistresses. "While you were gone, and he said, they are coming. On their way you see. I just hope they come here before the sunset." His words were packed with mocks and hint of sarcasm.

The two of them talked some more about random stuff for a while and eventually stared the people across them frustratingly. They had nothing to do with them. All they did was— be busy in their own world while here Payton and Kiara restlessly sat in their seats waiting for the actual clients to arrive.

When it became unbearable to wait with these mother fucker clients, Payton finally uttered, “Will they come today or not!? Or are they still to leave their homes?!” He banged his fists on the table attracting the other’s attention on him including the ones sitting across him.

They jumped in their places as their cute bubble of seduction burst by his loud shrill. “I will... I will call them and inquire, give me a minute.” No sooner have the tall guy removed his phone to do the needful than only it rung with notification that made his face to gleam in happiness. “They.. They reached. Excuse us please.” He along with the others walked out of there, leaving kiara and Payton excited.

They had their eyes glued to the massive entrance of the restaurant curiously waiting to see his clients. However, had not expected a tempest to approach them in the face of long term rivals!!!

Any ways, surprisingly the tall guy appeared again. He sheepishly smiled wishing them again as he forwarded few sets of papers to Payton. “Please sign these papers, ma’am and sir are just outside the gate. They will be here in no moment.” Though it was irking as they were again testing his patience yet Payton calmed himself accepting the papers from him.

While he was signing them Kiara stood to his side holding his arm shyly. Don’t know why but the environment has suddenly started to deceive her. She was not feeling good. All of a sudden, her zealous mood turned into a clumsy one where she felt very uncomfortable and exhausted.

As soon as Payton returned the signed papers, the tall guy raised his brows pointing over his back. “Ma’am is here!” They hurriedly turned around to see ‘the Ma’am’ who made them wait for so long and, their eyes popped out in shock whilst they uttered in unison, “Shania!”

Seeing her walk inside with Billy in her arms!!!!

Tbc...

Chapter 44

Are you baffled— on seeing me.

His head rested on her collarbone and fingers clutching the fabric of her one piece. His looked so weak that Kiara felt hard to breathe. She clutched the table behind her back taking its support. On the other side, Payton awkwardly saw the two women simultaneously in surprise.

His heart pumped in ache seeing Kiara's condition. He wished to provide her comfort and console her notwithstanding he himself could not stand Billy's weak occurrence. He was described in indescribable words by her to Payton but the way he was seeing Billy now, he was confused whether to believe her words she said earlier or believe how he physically looked like!

The surrounding blurred. What Kiara could concentrate on was only Billy. She yearned to see him in all these days, her heart ached to feel him, her hands itched to caress his cheeks, her motherly emotions craved to see him smile again henceforth make everything lively with his fascination.

"Give me a moment, I will go and give these papers to ma'am, till then please wait. We are going to have a long meeting regarding the contract." They heard the tall guy chip. He has taken the papers back in his hands and for now, he was preparing himself to go back to his boss (Shania) and show them to her.

Kiara turned her head away quickly wiping away her tears. She thanked her stars that Billy's face was not visible otherwise she would have lost to her heart and ended up crying profusely over his state. "Are you okay!" She nodded her head in yes pretending as if it did not affect her at all when Payton asked. "If you say then we can go back. I don't want you to feel uncomfortable." Payton asked her.

She did not look okay, her face described her dilemma yet when she again nodded her skull negatively he cannot stop himself from sighing. "Just focus on your deal Payton, this is my problem, not yours. You should not be compromising for me." He looked down biting his lips.

Yeah, the deal was important for him. He has been waiting for this day to come even before she has come to stay with him in his house however it was not as important as her. He can reject such deals a thousand times for her. The loss in business will not be as much severe as losing her. Her happiness matters him more.

The two of them stood there incredulously watching Shania walk in a passage to her right after glancing at the papers. The tall guy whispered something in her ear after which she directly walked away from there not even looking anywhere in the surrounding but her front.

What surprised them more was her attention that was limited only to Billy. Her one arm protectively held him close while the other one was over his head that fitted in her palm. She also pecked his hair stroking them affectionately. It was unbelievable.

From what she has heard and saw about Shania, she was not very fond of her kids. That was why she even killed her daughter Kiara, all the same as thoroughly she took care of him, it nowhere looked like she wanted to kill him too— as described by Raven. In fact, what she saw was damn opposite of whatever was described to her.

And somewhere she felt jealous of her. Jealous of seeing Billy silently curled up in her arms as if he was fond of her! His lenient appearance made her feel no good. 'May be he is getting habitual to her. He has to now stay with her forever.' Kiara thought sighing deeply.

May be this was life, unexpected and a bitch!!!

The aggression of Payton's face was worth a watch. His clenched teeth proved he was in no mood to take jokes. "I am telling you Kiara let's just go now. I don't want to wait for her any more. Bloody bitch!" He was shushed by Kiara when he abused her irritatingly.

Well what else do you expect a man to do when he is made to wait for an hour uselessly. The meeting that was supposed to be wrapped up in the afternoon only was dragged further to the approaching evening. It was 5.00 pm now. And it was irking him.

"I know why she is doing this." He neutrally watched her face as she continued, "She must have seen me with you and to show her power, she is doing this. She wants me to see her authority." Perhaps it was right for after a few minutes the tall guy had come to see them again to ask for more details regarding Payton's company's information.

As though it was not known at all!!!

His company was under top five and a leasing company for producing racing cars, no wonder why she would have asked for more information. Simple, because she wanted to see them struggle.

Another fifteen minutes passed and now Payton was adamant to leave when abruptly, "Uhh sir, we are sorry to make you wait but ma'am was busy with her son. He is a pain in the ass, bloody brat!" Kiara held her heart however her nerves warmed up listening him call Billy a brat and ass pain!

Payton maintained a straight face as he was curious to know what was that. He though annoyingly stared him for calling his Boss's child a brat but the excitement took over him that he ceased himself from shoving anything to the guy. "I was coming to call you right after ma'am entered the private lounge for the meeting but that stubborn kid of her started crying loudly screaming 'mamma' 'mamma' I don't know how ma'am handles him!" the moment he finished, it became more difficult for Kiara to cope up with the situation.

This guy did not understand why he was crying, she very well knows it though. “Any ways please follow me. Ma’am is waiting for you.” They walked behind him while he guided them from one corridor to other.

The private lounge didn’t seem to approach soon! Payton saw her face from the corner of his eyes. She seemingly feigned to be okay, yet he can sense she was having a hard time through this moment. His gaze was broken when he heeded the sound of the door lock unlatching.

There Shania stood across the floor the top window, lost in her phone as the tall guy guided them inside of a lavish room. It was neither a suite nor a normal room for visitors to sit but something extravagant. The room was big in size, bigger than the room she was currently staying in. The walls were painted with matte paint while the paintings hanging on the wall showed how overpriced it was!

But on a serious note, that didn’t appeal her much. What astounded her was— Billy’s non-existence in the room.

Shania was still lost when they entered the room and took a seat on the couch. Kiara sceptically read her physical appearance while accepting the glass of water that was offered to her by an amazingly dressed garcon smiling to her.

“Okay sure, I have already dispatched the contract papers to you, just update me once you get them. Hmm, okay then. See you tomorrow at the party. Bye.” Hanging the call, Shania shot a glance out at the setting sun.

The orange sun rays kissed her face abundantly. There were dark circle below her eyes that she happened to hide using heavy make yet it came out visibly adamant of her skin.”So good to have you here Payton!” She drank in some air filling her lungs before turning around.

“I never thought we will meet like profess—” the word stayed unfinished when her gaze fell on the couch with eye balls exploding out of their chambers.

Tbc...

Chapter 45 Tears of regret

Payton's point of view...

The two ladies in the room stared each other silently. From what I can sense, Shania was more than shocked on learning Kiara's presence here. She did not blink her eyes even for a second. Very well it was clear, she was insecure, baffled and curious to see her there WITH ME.

Her body never moved from the moment she turned around. I and Shania had done so many things to separate Raven and Kiara. She wanted Raven and I badly desired to own Kiara.

We worked together to separate them. And finally when they were separated we went our ways. Shania left the country with him while here I tried to woo Kiara. It was impossible though. After his leave Kiara never paid any heed to me or any other guy. She was genuinely in love with him and I know it might be very difficult for her to accept any other guy in his place.

I faked a cough to break their trance. Looking away from each other, the two of them heaved a breath preparing each other. There was anxiety written all over Shania's face. She seemed to be scared for some reason. "I never thought I will see her with you." I turned to face Kiara.

I accept I was equally responsible for her breakdown during college times, it was my plan to make Shania crazy for Raven and come up with a solid plan that can help separate them. However I don't want that to be revealed otherwise she will start hating me again. I cannot risk my years long hard work to go in vain.

"I didn't know it was you behind such a great product. You look too weird to be its owner!" I chipped grabbing her attention. "If you don't mind then can we talk like real professionals." Shania cocked a brow intently eyeing me with a smirk.

That was true I had to take her help at a point in life to woo Kiara but now I don't need anything from her. No matter what, I will be as stern as I can towards her if that's what it takes to keep Kiara to me.

Shania gave a 'whatever you say' type of look before she sat in front of us on a single couch. Throughout the while, Kiara silently read our body postures. She from time to time kept diverting her gaze from me to her as though trying to learn our minds.

"So Payton, I never get into any deal unless I see profit and you know that. But I must say I am quite impressed by your company, you are under top five famous entrepreneurs but obviously after me." I can't help but roll my eyes over her show off.

Last year her company bagged a rank ahead of mine notwithstanding, it makes no difference. "Come straight to the deal we are sitting here for. We have waited enough for you Shania, do not irritate me any more with your words. Let's just come to the conclusion whether we are collaborating or not." I was indeed rude and irritated.

After making us wait for the entire fucking day if she thinks she can talk to me as if nothing happened than she should know that I am still annoyed. Had I known the clients I was dying to collaborate with is no other than her, then I would never have come here.

I certainly do not want to bring about any gap between me and Kiara. Shania still scares me in this matter. If she can take Billy away from Raven after killing her daughter then she can do anything.

“Cool down Payton, you would not have been sitting here if we were not signing a deal. Just that I am shocked you finally got her!” I held my breaths praying to god. I can sense Kiara’s increasing temper. Every time Shania opened her mouth she dragged her in our conversation, I fear it will lead to one of the fights that can ruin our relationship. “From one billionaire’s room to another’s! I must say she is clever. After getting my husband’s bed she successfully attacked yours.” It boiled my blood. Her allegations angered me. She can say the heck she want but not about her physical relationships. I don’t want to hear that!

Keeping aside my phone as I leaned in to counter her statements, “Everyone knows who got into whose pants. For your information, Raven is not your husband any more and that shows how characterless you are to call somebody else’s husband— as your husband!” Her voice broke in the atmosphere.

She had managed her emotions not letting them out on her face yet her irritated voice reassigned how angry she was. I moved back suddenly seeing Shania laugh loudly as though she inhaled laughing gas. “Husband! Oh my goodness.” She fell back on the couch laying down on it. “Ooh yeah, that husband who you betrayed just for some good for nothing revenge that he was never supposed to be a target of. Raven was never at fault, lol. I happened to manipulate him and make him leave you. He just followed my words under my charm but look what you did! You left him when he needed you the most. Wow, if that makes you call him your husband than I should say, he is the most cursed husband.” She clapped her hands showing her excitement.

On the contrary Kiara sternly glared her tears filling her eyes. I need to do something before she gets back on the track of loving Raven. “Come on Kiara, let’s go. I don’t want to sign any deal with her, I told you that earlier. She is crazy!” quickly leaving my seat I insisted her to get up.

The more we would stay here the deeper their conversation would become and I know, at that point Shania will lose all her calm and speak out everything that is not supposed to be said. “Get up Kiara, I said let’s leave!” No sooner did I chip staring her face than the door behind us creaked open and there walked in an elderly woman holding Billy in her arms.

‘What the heck!!!’

My grip loosened on her wrist as I threw a close glance on the baby’s face. He nowhere seemed as normal as he was when I saw him outside. But in fact, his face has severely turned red with eyes wet with tears. Perhaps because I had not seen his face previously!

He hiccuped from time to time holding the two candies in his either hand while the woman walked in.

“Ma’am, would you mind if I take Master Billy out for a walk.” I looked back to see Shania who was now standing straight astonishingly.

Her laughs had replaced with perspiration while there Kiara rose on her legs too looking at the door over the woman’s face and Billy. “Billy!” She gasped seeing his tousled red face while on the other side, I intriguingly stared his changing expressions.

His dead face suddenly glistened while it’s redness deepened. “Mam-mma mamma” He fumbled breathing heavily. “Mammaaaa” And ended up crying like a maniac stretching out his hands toward Kiara like how badly he was dying to see her. “Mamma!” his head weakly fell back on the woman’s shoulder still he continued to scream and cry wriggling out of her hold and reach to Kiara.

“Billy!” Kiara grasped rushing toward him. Even my heart ached seeing his condition.

Kiara was hardly any steps away from him that, “Martina, take him out now!” Shania’s command echoed in the entire room as she pulled back Kiara’s arm not letting her go anyway ahead.

“Billy” Cried Kiara.

“Mammaaaa!” Kiara kept fidgeting there for freeing herself from her grip alas Billy was long taken outside providing that his scream stayed behind still resonating in my ears.

No sooner have he gone out, “Take her away Payton before I kill her!” Pushing her in my arms as Shania pointed at the door, I held her protectively.

She had lost her calm. “Come on Kiara, let’s go.” I dragged her frozen body out with me with a deep sigh with Billy’s screams still haunting my ear drums.

I made her sit in the car and just as I sat in my seat looking, my eyes fell on the rear view mirror

And realized, I had tears in my eyes too!

Tbc...

Chapter 46. No you weren't wrong

Third person's point of view....

They scurried out of the room with a lump in their throat. Payton tried to compose his calmed face as he moved ahead holding Kiara's wrist. She was too shocked to move on her own. Her eyes effortlessly stated somewhere in the mid air without batting her lashes whereas her slow dreading unusual breaths made it clear that the encounter had a hard impact on her.

Payton walked fast from right to left until he came to the passage leading to the main vestibule area of the hotel. He was too lost in the thought of getting themselves out that he totally lost his focus and ended bumping into someone's back ahead.

"Uhh I am extremely sorry, I did no—" His utterance further died in his mouth when his astonished faze shot a glance at the face of the person. "Girard!" on hearing the name Kiara looked in the opposite direction amidst her moist eyes only to lock eyes with an equally muddled Girard whose expressions showed how badly it hit him seeing her here all of a sudden after that unfortunate day!

His breaths hitched eventually bringing back the memories that must have been experienced during that phase a while back where she disappeared gradually turning the course of so many lives negatively. "Kiara!" His lips bore a sarcastic grin as his pupils blurred due to the accumulation of tears in his shocked eyes.

There was no need of exchanging words. Their eyes spoke everything that was meant to be talked on verbally. In fact, it was not even needed, if you ask Girard. What she did was her decision and how they managed to live after her leave was their decision. It was difficult to live as the little kid for whom she was married for had to suffered irrevocably.

Any ways, it would now be useless to raise that topic. So looking away swiftly with a deep breath of agony, "Excuse me" he walked away not even sparing a last glance to her as she had expected him to do so hence increasing her deceit.

The ride back to his abode was deadly and lifeless. None of the two spoke even a word after they exited Shania's unsuccessful meet. On top of that, it gave them a shock to get traumatized uselessly. Billy's face kept flashing in front of their eyes while the way he had cried pulling out the length of his tiny hands to go into Kiara's embrace haunted their imaginative powers.

It was heart crumpling. Alas, now it felt like they committed a great mistake. If not for Raven then at least this should not have been done to Billy! That poor kid, unnecessarily got into this revenge game and happened to be the only suspect suffering more than anyone else. "I do not want to say this as it was an advantage to me Kiara, but I feel like— we committed our life's biggest mistake. I regret for giving you such stupid idea for revenge. I am sorry to say but I

destroyed your happy family.” As he applied the brakes outside the bungalow, Payton asserted leaving connivance adamant on her face.

Although she agreed on that still she exited the car not even waiting for him eventually striding inside the bungalow silently. While she entered in ignoring the guard who saluted her, Payton came out too resting his one arm on the roof of the car and staring her as her figure disappeared inside the doors. “I feel guilty! I don’t know what are your feelings. I wish I could have met Billy before!” he talked to himself.

But on a serious note, is there a chance to mend things back again! May be, Yes.

Kiara’s point of view...

Midnight and the entire Siberia was lost in its dreamland dreaming, unfortunately I sat on the bench in the garden outside the luxurious bungalow of my admirer lost in my thoughts.

The whole day left a hard impact on my life. I met two most important people of my life who were a part of my healthy happy contended family someday. Alas, the way I happened to meet them was damn traumatizing. I could have never known that life will play such a trick on me!

Because it was supposed to be a happy ending of unfortunate life that I lived after Raven’s leave but when he entered back with the proposal of marriage I thought I will be able to seek my revenge. Albeit, it all came back on me.

I was supposed to be happy after leaving him, leaving Billy, leaving behind everything that Carters offered me regretfully I never lived a moment of happiness after leaving them. Seemed like I not only did betray them but myself also. The way Billy cried today seeing me after almost three months of gap, believe me it ripped my heart.

His cries are still echoing in my ears. His stretched out arms and the eagerness that he showed to come to me abused motherhood. How could you be so heartless Kiara! How could you! It has been three long fucking months, you did forget him, forget them (Raven and his family) however he still remembered you.

In fact, he remembered you like his only mother. That mother who left him out of nowhere just to seek her revenge on his father. “You would not have been feeling this if you had not taken that step Kiara!” I held my chest listening to a familiar voice playing in my ears.

“Girard.” When I turned to my right I found him sitting next to me, all dressed in white with perfectly combed hairs and neutral expressions on his face.

As soon as he shot his face up to see me, I read his eyes only to sense that they were seemingly so positive irrespective of what I saw today in the hotel. “Mmm hmm you got me right, Kiara. I can though understand your feelings. I can understand, It was not easy to take that step for you love Billy and Raven as much as they love you. However, your emotion of revenge was too

strong that it overpowered your love toward them hence forcing you to take such step.” My head lowered. The more he said the heavier my heart became.

Tbc...

Chapter 47

Being paranoid...

Third person's point of view....

They scurried out of the room with a lump in their throat. Payton tried to compose his calmed face as he moved ahead holding Kiara's wrist. She was too shocked to move on her own. Her eyes effortlessly stated somewhere in the mid air without batting her lashes whereas her slow dreading unusual breaths made it clear that the encounter had a hard impact on her.

Payton walked fast from right to left until he came to the passage leading to the main vestibule area of the hotel. He was too lost in the thought of getting themselves out that he totally lost his focus and ended bumping into someone's back ahead.

"Uhh I am extremely sorry, I did no—" His utterance further died in his mouth when his astonished faze shot a glance at the face of the person. "Girard!" on hearing the name Kiara looked in the opposite direction amidst her moist eyes only to lock eyes with an equally muddled Girard whose expressions showed how badly it hit him seeing her here all of a sudden after that unfortunate day!

His breaths hitched eventually bringing back the memories that must have been experienced during that phase a while back where she disappeared gradually turning the course of so many lives negatively. "Kiara!" His lips bore a sarcastic grin as his pupils blurred due to the accumulation of tears in his shocked eyes.

There was no need of exchanging words. Their eyes spoke everything that was meant to be talked on verbally. In fact, it was not even needed, if you ask Girard. What she did was her decision and how they managed to live after her leave was their decision. It was difficult to live as the little kid for whom she was married for had to suffered irrevocably.

Any ways, it would now be useless to raise that topic. So looking away swiftly with a deep breath of agony, "Excuse me" he walked away not even sparing a last glance to her as she had expected him to do so hence increasing her deceit.

The ride back to his abode was deadly and lifeless. None of the two spoke even a word after they exited Shania's unsuccessful meet. On top of that, it gave them a shock to get traumatized uselessly. Billy's face kept flashing in front of their eyes while the way he had cried pulling out the length of his tiny hands to go into Kiara's embrace haunted their imagination powers.

It was heart crumpling. Alas, now it felt like they committed a great mistake. If not for Raven then at least this should not have done that to Billy! That poor kid, unnecessarily got into this revenge game and happened to be the only suspect suffering more than anyone else. "I do not want to say this as it was an advantage to me Kiara, but I feel like— we committed our life's

biggest mistake. I regret for giving you such stupid idea for revenge. I am sorry to say but I destroyed your happy family." As he applied the brakes outside the bungalow, Payton asserted leaving connivance adamant on her face.

Although she agreed on that still she exited the car not even waiting for him eventually striding inside the bungalow silently. While she entered in ignoring the guard who saluted her, Payton came out too resting his one arm on the roof of the car and staring her as her figure disappeared inside the doors. "I feel guilty! I don't know what are your feelings. I wish I could have met Billy before!" he talked to himself.

But on a serious note, is there a chance to mend things back again! May be, Yes.

Kiara's point of view...

Midnight and the entire Siberia was lost in its dreamland dreaming, unfortunately I sat on the bench in the garden outside the luxurious bungalow of my admirer lost in my thoughts.

The whole day left a hard impact on my life. I met two most important people of my life who were a part of my healthy happy contended family someday. Alas, the way I happened to meet them was damn traumatizing. I could have never known that life will play such a trick on me!

Because it was supposed to be a happy ending of unfortunate life that I lived after Raven's leave but when he entered back with the proposal of marriage I thought I will be able to seek my revenge. Albeit, it all came back on me.

I was supposed to be happy after leaving him, leaving Billy, leaving behind everything that Carters offered me regretfully I never lived a moment of happiness after leaving them. Seemed like I not only did betray them but myself also. The way Billy cried today seeing me after almost three months of gap, believe me it ripped my heart.

His cries are still echoing in my ears. His stretched out arms and the eagerness that he showed to come to me abused motherhood. How could you be so heartless Kiara! How could you! It has been three long fucking months, you did forget him, forget them (Raven and his family) however he still remembered you.

In fact, he remembered you like his mother only. That mother who left him out of nowhere just to seek her revenge on his father. "You should not have been feeling this if you had not taken that step Kiara!" I held my chest listening to a familiar voice playing in my ears.

"Girard." When I turned to my right I found him sitting next to me, all dressed in white with perfectly combed hairs and neutral expressions on his face.

As soon as he shot his face up to see me, I read his eyes only to sense that they were seemingly so positive irrespective of what I saw today in the hotel. "Mmm hmm you got me right, Kiara. I can though understand your feelings. I can understand, It was not easy to take that step for you

love Billy and Raven as much as they love you. However, your emotion of revenge was too strong that it overpowered your love toward them hence forcing you to take such step." My head lowered. The more he said the heavier my heart became.

Tbc...

Chapter 48. I hope you are fine, raven

"Kiara! Kiaraaa!!!" a harsh shake and I came back to my senses blinking my eyes vigorously.

I looked in the front only to find Payton standing before me with a quizzical look. Where is my Raven? Where did my baby go? "Oh Kiara, I have been calling you since long. Where are you lost?" he asked me, but did he see that I was sitting with Girard and talking to him. Not only that, I was actually with my baby and Raven!!!

"I and Girard were talking about bil—" I turned my head pointing at the place beside me where Girard sat however it came out as a shock when I got to see none! "WY-where did he go?" He was nowhere to be seen.

I can't help but stand and look everywhere around with my eyes. I swear he was here right beside me and talking to me about getting Billy back and Raven's love for me. "Who are you talking about Kiara! There is no one. What are you looking for!" It was unbelievable.

I just talked to Girard, he was right there talking to me, and I was adamant to make Payton believe that too. "God's swear Payton, he was just here, and we were discussing about the hearing going to happen tomorrow for Billy's custody." I can't bring myself to trust that neither did I want him to trust that it was a lie.

After giving me such a hope, Girard won't go away. I know they all need me, Carter family needs me just like how need them right now. I miss them... I miss my family. I miss them all!

The thought of them again tore my eyes. There was no going away from this feeling. I wanted to rectify my sins, mend things back and after the conversation with Girard... A hope has risen within me. Please just tell me where the heck are you, Girard.

"Ugh, Kiara." My weak knees were on the verge of crashing but thankfully before I could kiss the ground I was engulfed into Payton's arms. He pulled me tight into his cage providing me the console I needed. "You probably were paranoid!" though it was difficult yet it was true.

I fucking hallucinated his presence around me. Otherwise, why on heaven's sake would he come here to see me and talk to me! It was a fucking vision.

"Hey it's okay! Happens. I know you are stressed out, so am I. Billy's face is hurting me too and I can't even catch some sleep but Kiara... This is not the end of life." I whimpered sending him detaching himself away from me.

The warmth was not exactly what I would feel in Raven's arms yet it was soothing enough. My sobs did not calm still it gave me the check that I was not alone. At least there was someone by my side to share my sorrows and pain.

"I knew it, Payton." It was perhaps the time to confess to him. He had strong feelings for me, Payton had bought me here to lighten up my mood but least idea did we have we would be caught in the puzzles of life and stuck deeper and deeper onto it. "Raven had told me already during his confession that he married me for Billy. But, later he also mentioned he wants Billy and me together at the same time in his life. He has told me that, 'Kiara, I could never be a good father for Billy in these two years of his life but now that you have come... We will be his best parents together. I need your support to fulfil this dream of mine, Kiara' And I just— left the very next day of his confession. I feel like a criminal, Payton." It was hard recalling those moments.

I still remember Raven's expressions— so pure and real. He was seriously happy around me. The kind of smile he would give me and his face would adore... Seemed gratefully real. In fact, it never seemed like he never smiled like that in all these years!

We were contended as it was the life we always wished to live. He was the Raven i dreamed of living my entire life with... And I was the same Kiara he desired to spend his breaths with. Alas, just within a night everything changed. Our happy lives changed into something opposite of that.

"It's alright Kiara... Mistakes happen. But then, there is also a chance to correct those mistakes. Even you will get your chance... Just have faith in life and God." Payton shook my shoulders as he could see I was extremely lost in my thoughts.

He knew it was important to pull me out of my thoughts otherwise I would fall deeper into my realization and worsen my condition. He continued to shake until I gasped perceiving a harsh shake hitting me. "When I— who wanted to separate you from him, can say this then why can't you trust it, Kiara!" I blinked my eyes concentrating on his words.

Oh yeah, again I was being selfish. So selfish that I did not think of this person standing before me to consider about him and his life. I was brought here by him for a reason. He brought here with the motives of freshening my mind and wooing me as his women nevertheless I became so caught up with my own problems that I yet again forgot to think about him.

"I am soo sorry, Payton. It was supposed to be us but I—"

"Hey, not now." I coveted to apologize to him, and he decided to interrupt me. His forefinger of the other arm that was not encircling my waist pressed on my lips not letting me finish off what I wished to say. The moment was indeed painful as I can see his feelings right in his eyes. "You have a family to build kiara, a damaged kid to look after, a ruined husband to love and a life to make it worth of living. So many responsibilities yet you want to think about someone who just wished to destroy your life, not fair!" My eyes were left wide in shock.

Was he even real?

Could he really be so selfless. My mind refused to trust him. He cannot be the same Payton with whom I spent four years of college. Didn't he lust me and desired to part me away from Raven? Oh that I could comprehend it like that but no— this man standing before me was holding a completely different personality from the guy whom I knew in the college.

That was right that, the Payton I met in the college, lusted me. Nonetheless, the Payton that I was standing here now with, really loved me. His loyalty made another fresh badge of tears to fill my eyes.

I took him so wrong all these tears, I cursed him unnecessarily and that proved how as individuals we have wrong perceptions about some people in life. It is therefore, rightfully said that, we should not judge any book by its cover!

"How could you be so nice, this is not the Payton I had met in college!" Playfully hitting my wrist on his chest I pulled his leg to which he blushinglly smiled and looked down.

I cannot describe how cute he looked at the moment, "The credits go to you, Mrs. Carter. This is all because of you that I am changed into a different person. It's the beauty if your innocence unfortunately, my bad. I can't own you in this life!" He faked a sigh with a crying face.

I playfully hit him again but this time on his head, "Shut up! You will get someone better than me." He rolled his eyes showing off his attitude that my mouth firmed into O.

"Come on, let's go in. We have a lot of things to do from tomorrow." We initiated our walk towards the door. "And before anything, we need to find out about your husband's current situation. Nobody heard about him anything after the Billy's hearing, Kiara. It's dreading but true!" no sooner he mentioned that than my heart skipped beats.

I hope you are fine Raven!

Tbc...

Chapter 49. She killed the human in him

Third person's point of view...

The next morning was a bit calm. It was though one of the difficult mornings for Kiara she anyway welcomed it with a smile. Last night she hallucinated talking to Girard after having bumped into him in that hotel's corridor.

In fact, the meet with Billy before that has harmed her emotions too much that she cannot bring herself to face him. She just destroyed their lives. Even though she was not completely the one to be accused of the Carter family's damage she was still responsible ruining it. At least that was what she thought to herself.

However, the talk with Payton last night gave her a hope. A hope of getting things back to its track. She did do wrong in her anger but it was not yet too late. There was still an opportunity to mend things back. And Kiara, she was determined to do that.

Her eyes dizzily blinked meeting Payton on the dining table. "Good morning." Forcing a smile, she took a seat next to him silently.

The morning was not as it used to be before. It was rather a sad one. Too many thoughts had engulfed the both of them. While the servant served breakfast in their dishes they sat zoned out. It was indeed a matter to be depressed. They fucking saw how poorly baby Billy cried seeing Kiara.

She must not have considered him her son, but he did take her as his mother. A mother was much more than a biological mother of his. But what she did! She deceived his emotions. She played with his life for her advantage which was really not a good thing to do.

The maid was gone, Payton picked up a fork in order to begin his breakfast nevertheless when his eyes met with Kiara's face, he stopped. "Hey what's up? Are you not well." She was crying silently. Her face was red and her fingers slowly trembled in her lap.

She seemed way too disturbed that Payton had to leave his spot and pull her into his arms. "Hey, don't worry Kiara... We know it's not truly your fault." He stroked her hair while his voice became heavy too.

Indeed, she was not to be at fault but him. It was his plan that due executed. If he had never updated Kiara regarding Raven's selfish meet that she had never known that he was going to marry her for a reason. And then, eventually after meeting Billy she would have obviously forgotten and forgive all of his mistake and had accepted a happy life.

But no, just because he wanted to own her he played a trick. Payton used his brain and destroyed their lives. More than her, it was him who was responsible for poor Billy's condition. If only he had seen him before her leave ever then she would have never happened.

Unfortunately, it was not the time to regret it on what has happened. It was the time to think and act as to how everything could be mended!

"I feel pathetic, Payton. I wonder how would he be? His son seemed so devastated without me then Raven, his condition would have been worsen than him. I want to know about him, Payton. I want to know about him." Kiara cried her heart out.

So this time it was not Billy that made her cry but his father. Raven blindly trusted her. So blindly that when she called him the very first time after leaving them... He still begged for her return. His broken voice and that fumbling while he had spoken to her with played in her head.

Payton sighed. He himself had no idea what could be Raven's condition for now. From what he was told the last time when he was seen, it was not at all pleasing. "Don't you worry Kiara, we will do something. You want to know about him... I will get his info for you but please, I request you, don't cry. You need to stay strong. If you want to rebuild your house you need to stay strong as from now on you are going to encounter many undesirable circumstances." It could not stop her tears. Payton though tried his best way to console her she anyway cried.

Perhaps, she could understand the turmoil going on within him thousands of kilometres away, in his home town.

Seattle Airport,

9.45 am,

The lounges were crowded with passengers. There was frequent announcement echoing as the planes on the runway took off and landed at different area. From one of the planes that just landed, passengers walked out with their baggages.

"This way sir." custom officers directed the commuters to pass their luggage through the baggage scanner machine.

Girard was one of them. Yeah, he was one of the passengers returning to home town. However, he has not returned from a happy happy trip but a trip that got him shocked for the rest of the night. The encounter with kiara replayed before his irises as he placed his black bag on the conveyor belt.

He walked ahead to get the same from the other side absent mindedly. It was adamant on his face that he had not anticipated to bump into Kiara like that last day. He was though walking further his mind was in another world notwithstanding.

'Rave was right. She escaped with Payton. I don't know how will he react after getting this update.'

Girard thought going to the parking area where his driver was already waiting for him.

He stuffed the bag in the back seat while he himself settled in the front seat beside the driver. "Do you know where is Rave?" He asked the driver. The driver nodded as he pulled the car on the busy road with other vehicles.

"Yes, sir. He is at the office since three days." Girard sighed on the driver's update.

He looked out of the window shaking his head negatively. "This guy!" His expressions clearly said he was irritated.

Why won't he be though?

After that filthy woman's leave, he totally changed. She killed his human totally. He was a living corpse in true sense. No expressions, no emotions, no time for anyone nor himself and no rest. He occupied himself with work too much that he forgot he was also a human.

Tbc...

Chapter 50. I know what you want to talk about!

Girard's point of view...

Billy's leave from his life brought loneliness and restlessness. He spent more time in office than house. And that was why whenever he was unavailable to me called via phone we knew it that we can find him in one place only—his office.

On the day of hearing, we saw him crying hysterically for Billy and after that he forgot now to smile. Or I should say, he forgot how to respond emotions.

A month has passed to that day but it already looks like decades moved by, and we couldn't make a move ourselves. Kiara's leave was a living cursed on Raven.

Never mind, I won't think about that woman as I have promised my brother. Later that night after Billy and his stuff was taken away from dad's house, Raven took a promise from me. He asked me to never discuss her, to never raise any topic which has her mention.

The doors of the elevator split opened, I stepped out on the fifteenth floor. The entire floor was isolated with no human present. And the credit definitely goes to my brother. He isolated himself from the world so badly that he separated everything from the world— his cabin too.

He asked to leave the entire floor alone for himself, Raven restricted even his secretary to have an office here. He just engulfed himself in a cocoon of misery and dead silence.

I did not knock on the door before entering his room. He knew that it could be me or dad to enter his room without any permission. "Hi!" I wished him while he looked up from the screen of his laptop looking as always— emotionless.

His eyes stared me with no hint of softness. His once pinkish lips were dry and a shade darker. That is because he have picked up the addiction of smoking after her departure. She hated seeing him smoke and to hurt her feelings, Raven began to smoke.

Leave that, his cheeks that used to be bubbled up like balloons and adorned with dimples— have now reduced. They looked more like a pale patient's cheek; whereas his stubble that used to suit him and take away the hearts of the people who set their eyes on him; have now grown up thick.

"Hey!" He replied me looking back in the laptop.

The look of his face told me he had cried some hours ago. He still pretended as if nothing happened. But he cannot hide it from me, I know that very well. "Eh can you keep that stupid

laptop of yours aside! I want to talk to you." He was not ready to listen to me or react to my presence in his cabin, so I simply pulled his laptop away from his reach.

I placed it next to me on the chair. I can't stop my smile seeing that his eyes were now finally giving me the attention I needed. However, it soon vanished when he announced, "I know you want to talk about your encounter with her!" I can't suppress my gasps.

How did he know about that? As far as I know I never talked to him until now.

My this confusion was also cleared by him, "Shania called me, she sent me a clip of you and her bumping in her hotel in Serbia." Although I never expected that from Shania but I wondered why would she do that.

Was not that enough she took Billy away from Raven? Wasn't that enough that she hurt him in the worst ways. Then why did she call him.

I was mad, the way Raven serenely and painfully smiled seeing my face I understood, he can see that too. I wanted to ask him as to why he took her call but before that, "She met Shania" he disclosed confusing me more.

"Yep, she also met Billy who ended crying looking at her. She was with Payton, wasn't she?" I can't answer, he was right. Raven laughed sarcastically, "They had gone to meet Shania to sign a deal. She is going to get married to Payton." I can't breathe, that piece of info was too much to believe.

I trust everything that Raven said so far but I don't trust the news that she is getting married to Payton. If she really wanted to— then she had not been crying like that when she bumped into me.

Obviously she was shocked seeing me all of a sudden. Indeed, she seemed guilty but it is next to impossible to believe, they are getting married.

"And you know what... That woman did not even shed a fucking tear when Billy was crying! She just pulled Payton out and left him weeping." his voice choked and that was when I realized Raven was crying.

His streaming tears screamed out his pain. I can doubt anything but his emotions. I wouldn't have believed his words or whatever Shania informed him. Nevertheless, his cries were enough to understand Shania didn't lie to him.

That was my misunderstanding I thought her to be fit for my brother. Now I wish that she never comes back in his life. I just hate her. I hate her!

In Serbia,

Payton's house,

Kiara sat in the garden admiring a pair of ducks swimming in the pond of the garden. They were a couple it seemed. What she loved the most was the train of five cutie baby ducks following them as they cried 'quack quack'

Her lips formed into grin seeing how they dipped their head in the water imitating their mother.

No doubts that children learn from their mother. Most of the habits is inherited from them.

So does that mean Billy will also be a cheater like Kiara in his future? Will he also become a heart breaker and family destroyer like her?

"Nooo!" Her scream of refusal echoed in the surrounding context.

The birds that were picking up on grains in the piece of garden across her flew back in the air scared at the intensity of her scream.

Kiara burst into tears, her lashes wetted with the drops of saline water falling back to back on her cheek. She was vulnerably regretting her deeds alas, there was no one to give her a shoulder to cry until, "Kiara!" Payton appeared. He pulled her in his arms and placed a trail of kisses on her hair.

He does not have to ask her the reason behind her sudden out break. What else can it be than the memories of Billy? She was dying every second after the other day's experience.

"It's alright babe. Stop crying. Nothing is going to change with your crying. We will have to work physically for that." He rubbed her back since her cries were taking the shape of hysterical sobs.

Payton sighed. Nothing was calming her down. "In fact, I got a good piece of news for you Kiara. Tomorrow there is the third anniversary party of Marshall jewellery. It's one of the biggest jewellery companies in USA. And guess what, according to my sources, all the CEOs and top businessmen have been invited to join the party. I also got an invitation for the same." he informed her.

She has still not been able to put back her guilt and stop crying. Moreover, she did not understand what was he intending to say until he took his name, "Raven will be there too. Yes Kiara, Raven and Shania both of them will be there. It can be our chance to take step towards that change. Are you getting what I want to say!" he pulled her away from the hug staring in her eyes.

"Are you sure he will come?" She innocently asked her, to which Payton nodded in yes.

His source never gave him false information. It always proved correct and relevant. Hopefully, Raven will turn in the party too.

Tbc...

Chapter 51. The party

Dressed into the most expensive dresses women walked gloriously through the red carpet inside the biggest ceremony hall of Washington, The palace.

The name was enough to describe what kind of place it was. White marbles cemented together into a big astounding building with four pillars supporting the massive entrance door on either side gave the paparazzi a good location for their camera.

While the famous celebrities along with the popular business persons were making their way inside the plush entrance door one after another. There was no stopping to the back to back arriving of cars as there stepped outside the invited guests to the third anniversary of the Marshals jewellery.

"Three successful years passed by, and we didn't notice it! I would dedicate this success to our Hard working team of employees and employers who managed to bring us to this position. And also, I am glad to all the competitors out there who made it possible. Without them we could never achieve this. A healthy competition is that where we have fair competitors after all! Thanks to everyone who directly or indirectly gave us a hand in our growth. Much love and care to them"

Mr. Marshall the owner of the Marshall jewellery finished his interview with the most powerful and descriptive speech.

The media can never be satisfied. They always look forward to more and more recipes to help their channel bag the first spot in TRP. But much to their disappointment, Mr. Marshall left at once right after he finished chipping the last word.

Leaving the reporters wanting for more he sprinted within the doors and vanished at once while the crowd of media continued giving their heads up. Inside the party, the crowd swayed lightly on the slow music and chalices of drinks in their palms.

From blue to green there were all colours of clothes worn by the guest. Their jewellery spoke they came from a high class family. "I feel uncomfortable, Payton. Everyone is looking at me." While the other women in the hall enjoyed getting the attention of the male population, Kiara stood out as an exception.

She bit her lips looking heck uneasy as the nasty glares of strange men stayed on her body for more than necessary while. "Kiara, they are looking at you because you have happened to be the most beautiful lady present in the party. Just look at other ladies, they don't look as charming as you." Payton was right.

Kiara looked too gorgeous in an azure off shoulder gown. Her hair were curled from the tips and a beautiful necklace adorned her neck. Lastly, a pretty hand clutch just added to her looks as she really stood out as the most outstanding looking woman in the party.

That remark from Payton shut her mouth. She seemed to be satisfied by his words. Kiara smilingly excused Payton as he was dragged in a group conversation of men. She was all alone yet not alone as her eyes were busy in finding that one and only face.

Raven! Yeah, he was that one and only guy for whom she was waiting.

Almost all the guests arrived but him and his ex-wife, Shania. There was no sign of the two. Kiara was certain that Shania may bring Billy with her. And if her thoughts were anywhere going to be true then she had made her mind that she would definitely meet her son.

Her heart was craving to feel him in her arms. Her motherly embrace yearned him. She was craving for him just like how a pauper misses money!

Minutes passed and Kiara continued standing in the corner of the hall. She was not interested in the party at all. So when a handful of guys approached her for couple dance, as the music was now changed and couples were grooving and shaking their hips on the centre of the hall, Kiara smilingly refused them.

She was not in the mood to dance. Not when her heart was craving the sight of her son and his father!

(thirty minutes later)

The party was in full swing. Music kept changing from jazz to loud the amount of people dancing on the dance floor keep on increasing. The organizer of the party, Mr. Marshall joined the group where Payton was dragged at, and they talked.

Kiara looked around at the people. The thirty minutes assured her that neither him nor Shania would come and with that thought, just as Inaya made her walk towards the ladies wash room, she heard two women talk, "Look there, that's Shania Avram with her son!" Kiara immediately turned around.

Her eyes watered as they met with little Billy's sad face. He looked vulnerable while he rested his head on his biological mother's shoulder. "She won his custody case." The second lady spoke as Shania walked inside with her dozen of body guards surrounding her from the back.

"I heard his ex-husband married some chick, so he can win the case! I wonder why can't he still win?"

" Her heart sank, that was the most dreaded words she ever heard.

As a father Raven did everything he can seemingly his fate was not in his favour itself.

Shania walked in waving off her guards. They scattered in different corners in the hall as she herself walked near Mr. Marshall. He have separated himself from the cluster and now smiling his teeth at her.

Her eyes winked at the man, Shania handed Billy in the arms of an agedly woman. She whispered something into her ears and the woman walked out of there at once with whining Billy.

"Leave them. Who are we to speak anything about them! That woman is crazy, she will kill us if she gets any idea we were talking about her personal life. Let's change the topic." The first lady declared pointing her glass of wine in Shania's way.

Kiara was still in her spot. She can't make a move. The view of Billy's face and the conversation of the two women pushed her more in the ocean of guilt. She wanted to go but her legs failed. They were not ready to move ad they could slip anytime since her energy was totally drained out looking at the next entry.

It was Raven. With huge crowd of media that came inside the party, Raven secured his goggles on his nose. There was Girard too. Both the Carter brother have taken the excitement of guest on another level.

Women gasped, some licked their lips while some controlled their increasing heart beats seeing how the two Greek Gods stepped in the party. Last yet to be the best. They indeed graced the party with their occurrence.

"Freak, how can someone be so stupid, Monica just look at him. He is soo gorgeous!" The remark of the same woman brought Kiara to her senses. She was zoned out.

She quickly ran to a corner hiding behind a curtain draped around a pole as decoration. "You are right. He looks handsome even in beard. He changed his look I guess" The second woman said moving her eyes on Raven's body.

Kiara never realized that until she heard her speak. Raven had grown few inches long beard, his eyes looked dizzy and tired. His pink lips didn't look pink at all. They were slightly purple now... And Kiara knew it why?

He must have started smoking. Smoking was the only way how he escaped the truth of life. Even in college, when they had a big fight, obvious because of Payton since he was behind Kiara, they had come to a point where it was almost a break up. That time also he smoked. Smoking in painful times was his old habit.

The party again turned exciting with loud music. The dance floor was once again crowded with couple dancing. The tune was forcing Kiara to join the other and show some of her step. She wanted to go to the floor with her man, her Raven. They were not yet divorced, they were still a couple.

Raven was standing with a cluster of people taking with them. She was soothing her heart by drinking the nectar of his handsome face unless she saw Shania approaching him.

She pulled Raven by the wrist such that he almost collided with her body. Her lips moved near his ear lobe before she dragged in on the dance floor leaving Kiara in tears.

Tbc...

Chapter 52. I need him

Kiara's point of view...

He was really dancing with that woman who killed his daughter. Not even did he look disgusted for a second. Her dress was backless, looked like Shania purposely wore a dress like that knowing that she would get to dance with her ex husband.

My heart broke shattered laying my eyes on their bodies. They were pressed together and oh—she kissed him on the lips. Whispers erupted in the entire hall, people were talking about them.

The ex couple was kissing each other on the dance floor. Cherry on top, a spot light fell on them hence highlighting their kiss scene in the party. Flickering lights of cameras filled my ears as there were camera men standing in the corners taking good snaps of couple kissing.

Enough!

I can't see them any more. Raven responded to her kiss too. Not being able to take the pain I ran out of that hall. I stopped across a garden. The sky was drizzling lightly.

My body slid on the floor since my legs finally gave up. They were shaking in the hall only, but they gave up here. I am happy that I didn't fall there otherwise I could not escape that scenario.

But honestly— I deserved that.

I destroyed my life with my own hands. And I cannot blame Raven for responding to the kiss. It was me only forced him to do that. Only if I had not left him in the most needed times then today he would have avoided the kiss.

I sat there crying to myself. The memories of their kiss resumed in front of my eyes again and again. Raven is a good kisser, I can feel Shania enjoying his lips on hers.

And the very thought of them kissing again made me cry.

Don't know how long I kept sitting there. My back was aching now. I pulled myself up standing on my feet again. I have overcome those memories. In fact, I was feeling light headed now after crying.

I wouldn't go back in the party though. I don't want to see them again. So with a quick message I delivered to Payton, I informed him about my whereabouts and walked out the garden.

All I need is some time alone before I face Raven. Yes, it was the main reason why I came to the party. I want to talk to him about us, about our son. He will be hurt for some time but I know he will forgive me.

Hope is everything. If I hope than anything is possible.

I was walking on the garden alone. The drizzling has stopped now. It felt good. I wish if I could have a company— wait, was that Billy's voice?

I was enjoying my time alone unless I heard some cries. They belonged to a kid. Moving my legs in that direction, I quickly looked behind the pillar where they grew loud and, "Billy!" My eyes filled with tears as it was really him.

I can't stop my emotions at all. My legs sprinted towards the lady who was holding him and turned her around. As soon as his eyes fell on me he smiled brightly while his arms moved randomly in the air. "Billy, my baby!" I raised my hand in order to caress his cheek, but he bust into loud cries.

"Mamm... Mamma!!" He blinked his lashes jumping in her hands.

He was certainly shocked and over delighted seeing his mamma. The lady was perplexed with my sudden appearance. She hugged Billy tight, "Please, I am his mother. Please let me hold him once just once." I begged her looking at how my baby jumped in her hands, he wanted to come in his mamma's arms.

She seemed his nanny. But very kind one as the next moment, right after she heard Billy calling me 'mamma' and stretching out his arms to me, she handed him in my arms stepping aside.

I can't control my feeling. Three months, I was holding him after three months. My heart pained seeing how he trembled in my arms. He was still not able to believe I was really back. His little arms curled around my neck while his tiny head pressed against my thoughts.

My already dried throat turned even dryer feeling his lips quiver across my skin. He was in real pain. His nanny was in tears too.

"Hey Billy, that's okay.. That's okay baby. Mamma is here! Stop crying shh." My hands continuously stroked his head and back simultaneously as I hugged him close to my chest.

His never stopping sobs made realize what torture did I do on him by leaving him away. That made me recognize as the most cruel mother. I gave him life, brought him back to the world of happiness nevertheless when he was really learning as to how beautiful the world really was— I left him.

"Shh... No baby... Don't cry. Mamma's here. Sushh... It's okay... It's okay." It took me sometime to calm him down.

His body was sticking to mine like a baby monkey to his mother. The only thought of it brought a smile on my face. He gave me the big gesture position in his life. He really calmed down in my arms.

I gazed at his nanny, she smiled wiping her tears away. She seemed impressed by me as I managed to calm my baby within few minutes. He yet sobbed, he had stopped wriggling but his lips still moved across my throat.

"You don't know how much he missed you, madam." I was busy stroking his back when his nanny spoke recognising me as his step mother.

All I can do was look at her face and smile since Billy had his face hidden in my throat. I didn't want to disturb my baby at all. "He never stopped missing you. Shania ma'am shouted on him so many times for he wouldn't call her Mum. How can he call her a mother when it was you who he always wanted. I am happy you came. Please take him away with you otherwise he'll die. He seems too attached to live without you!" She disclosed.

It only watered my eyes more. My baby missed me so much. He also suffered a lot in my absence. I committed my life's biggest mistake by leaving him behind me. That was the only thing I could do to hurt Raven Though.

Any which ways, now I know what I have to do next. Mistakes can be mended, and I was here for the same reason only. "You've grown so stubborn Billy." Just as he upped his face from my embrace I faked a stern face to him, he only pouted his lips while rubbing his. He was sleepy.

"You want to sleep? Sleep peacefully, mamma is here with you" I pressed his head on my chest back.

He obediently snuggled neck before he closed his eyes. I was happy as my baby looked somewhat relieved. "Uh, have Shania booked any room here?" The building was huge, Shania must have booked a room for Billy.

The lady nodded in yes, she pointed behind me saying, "Yeah, it's in the east part of the hotel, on the third floor." I turned around after she walked ahead of me, following her to the room.

Nevertheless, just as I detached my eyes from Billy's face to look in the front then I had to abruptly halt since there was Girard standing far away from us at staring me.

Even though he was away, I can spot disgust and hatred in his eyes. He was probably disgusted that after doing so many oppressions of Billy here I was standing hugging him to my chest.

I only felt like going somewhere far away from his glares. They were making me feel disgusted too. I can sense what he was feeling and thinking now. Perhaps, thinking how heartless and characterless I was!

My eyes matched with the ground beneath as he came walking towards us. He did not say anything. In fact, he did not even look at my face after he stopped right across me a few inches away. All he did was longingly gawk at the Billy in my arms.

His face hanging on my shoulder while he snored peacefully. It allows his uncle to get a clear view of his face.

I know he had too much to talk, yet he kept quiet. He behaved as if I was invisible. He didn't seem surprise seeing me here though as this was not our first meet. All the shocking expressions and the gasps— I witnessed them in the corridor of that hotel that day.

"I know I may be looking very disgusting and pathetic woman to you... But I want you to know I regret every moment till now. I am ashamed of taking a revenge on Billy to hurt Raven. But I swear, I swear Girard, I love Billy more than myself."

He didn't want to speak but I wanted to. I don't care whether he would believe me or not, I just wanted to make myself clear.

" You believe it or not, from now on I will do everything that I can to save him from all the threats." I can only sigh as his eyes were now on my face. "To give you a piece of information, I am going to file a case for Billy's custody case in the Supreme Court next month with the help of Payton, I just want him back. I need him. I just..." my throat choked and I can't continue my sentence any more.

I think leaving it incomplete was better than completing it. I didn't want to cry and sob and disturb my baby's sleep, "Please take me to the room" I quickly walked to his nanny so that I can go away from his burning glares.

The old lady gave me a Bob as she started her walk further. I followed her but don't know what got into my mind that I stopped again, turned around and addressed Girard again, "I don't deserve your help... But I'd be glad if you can bring Raven and your parents in the court. Payton will pass you the details" May be, I can rely on him in this matter.

If he really planned getting me married to Raven for Billy then probably, he will also bring them there! He is a great brother.

Tbc...

Chapter 53. So this was Girard's secret

A month later,

Raven's point of view...

"Spilling out the secret won't spoil you plan, Jerry!" My mind was irritated, so I exclaimed with a little rudeness.

None can blame me here since my elder brother was being a pain in my ass. This guy announced regarding a secret the other night at the supper. He told us to be ready in the early morning by 7.30 am as he would be taking us to somewhere!

"Why so impatient, bud? Have some faith on your brother, you will know when i reach the venue." Alright, I swear I will not utter a word after that.

Mom and dad sat in the back seat in Girard's car once I was done clasping the buckle of my seat belt. I wonder what was so that secret! He was currently standing distanced from the car being busy with his phone.

His voice was feeble, so I cannot hear his voice. He was talking to someone in a whisper tone. Mayhap, he got another evil plan in his head with regard to my love life.

That sounds funny, I know but that is hindered and ten percent true. This guy, after the leave of my cruel fake wife's, bought me a dozen of girls so that I can hook up with them.

After the day when Shania won Billy's custody case, I was marred. Being betrayed, on top of that I had to bear the ache of getting separated from my son. I had turned cold towards my life as there was no reason to live it.

I cannot get over the shock. It has left a dark stain on my memory. The betrayal was not hurting but her lie did. She promised me to give my son a good life. She promised to behind goddess mamma but all she became was a vamp step mother.

She proved the world wide proven theory of step mothers by hurting Billy like that. She was no exception as step mum. Indeed, why children fear their father getting a step mum is now cleared to me otherwise I had though, they be a life maker in a broken child's life. However, that woman just pulled the veil from my eyes by playing with my baby's feelings.

I so much hate her. So much that after her leave, I never let her name appear of my lips nor in my mind.

Now I don't feel guilty for leaving her in college. She merited that. The God already knew she was going to play with my son's life may be that is why he made me abandon her in the past!

'But wasn't her revenge the outcome of your abandoning!'

I was stunned getting a reply from my heart.

'If only you had stayed with her, loved her, consoled her in the times when she needed you the most then perhaps Billy had been your and her creation not your and Shania's'

This organ is so diplomatic. Sometimes it cries for what she did to my son and sometimes, it just defends me for being a brute in the past.

Honestly, if this heart of mine has understood her love at once then don't have to face all this. It was this stone cold heart's fault, not mine!

"Sorry, that was a business call." Girard sat in the driver's seat. He looked amused and very excited.

The ache and hurt I have seen on his face for months was not visible any more. To spill a secret, Gerry happened to be the mostly affected person of all the chaos occurring in our lives.

Nevertheless— spotting him smiling and gleaming in an unknown excitation got me wondering about the cause behind it!

After he wore his seat belt, he hit the accelerator starting the engine

"I am shifting in our mansion, dad." I so knew it there was some strong reason behind his smiles.

Now he was even shifting to Seattle back. Few months back he was so caught up in the grave reality that he wanted to move into Serbia. He wanted to get over the loss. Today, as he disclosed the amusing news it just excited to another level that I had to ask him the reason.

"You seem too excited, Gerry. Tell me what's the reason behind it?" his excitement was exciting me.

His lips curved into a cute grin, and he replied, "Just wait for the car to stop. You will get the answers to your questions" With that being said he sped up the car as we entered the tunnel.

(thirty minutes later)

After getting stuck in traffic, stopping by near a stationary and accumulating some print out from the same we finally stopped. Nonetheless, my mind could not process anything as Girard pulled the car across the SUPREME COURT!

I immediately stilled my eyes on him, waiting for a reply, he only got down of the car followed by our parents. "This is the answer to all your questions, Rave. The Supreme Court!" The white building with a line of stair case leading up inside the same was empty with a cluster of people walking in and out of it.

Our parents were as amazed as I was seeing how Girard closed the door of his car and smiled watching our confused faces. He was enjoying our expressions. "What's cooking in your devilish head now?" Dad exactly asked what I had been preparing myself to Girard.

He was pestered by the lack of information, obviously. My parents were given as much information as I had received. Today was Sunday and a day off for dad. He usually spent this time visiting his some old friends in the outskirts or rather spent it doing over job.

Billy's leave from the house have not only turned me into a machine but my father too. He worked day and night only to forget his little grandson.

"I swear I will kick your ass if you won't spill the beans" he threatened Girard in an attacking positing.

Dad pulled his sleeves up all ready to punch my brat brother by raising his hands in the air. "Easy... Easy... Easy dad!" Scared, Girard took a defending position covering her front. He inhaled a big gulp of air before he pointed out at an Audi that stopped right beside ours.

It was not any strange car, I knew who it belonged to. "Shania!" that was my ex wife looking severely outraged yet appalled while Billy cried in her arms.

Her father walked out of the car behind her throwing me with his pathetic looks. Shania's eyes threw daggers at me amidst those tears which lingered on her Lower lashes.

She discerned to be vexed. Her uneven breaths were the clue. Dad and I glanced each other until we both motioned our faces to see Girard's amused expressions all together. We were not yet cleared with the reason as to why were we standing across the Supreme Court along with an outrageous Shania who was murdering me with her red eyes while she hugged my crying son to her chest.

"So you finally played your card, didn't you?" While Billy wept in an attempt to reach out to me between his hiccups, his mother grumbled in utmost loathe. "I thought you were done with her and, you... You finally understood it was us who meant to be."

Trust me I had no idea what she was grumbling on me for. Her quivering lips in anger, twisted and twitched as I kept glued to my spot knowing nothing how to react. "I told you Kiara's death was an accident..." She brought the talks of that ungrateful day when I lost my daughter.

"Listen..." I began not wanting to stretch it further.

I did not want to give my son to her earlier but after seeing that she was doing everything to be his best mommy, I gave up on him. She was really forcing herself to give him all her affection. "NO need of clarification Rave..." As soon as I heard Girard quote that, at the very moment I saw a Mercedes stopping just on the left side of our car. "We will directly talk about it in the court." He pulled me away from her while the car that stopped beside ours– that opened and... no, that can't be true.

That cannot be fucking true!

Tbc....

Chapter 54. Back to mommy Kiara

The blood in my veins seemingly felt draining out. She was standing right in front of my eyes after so many months. Not only my blood was feeling affected but also my throat.

However, She was standing there with her new lover.

Infinite thorn of ache pricked my pipe as I swigged my saliva struggling to keep calm. Her face was in front of me once again. The face, that got me sobbing on the next day of her leave. The face, that got me yearning it while my son was being snatched away from my arms.

"And you Shania, enough of your drama, today we will show you what it means to be hurt!" I was too dumbstruck by her occurrence that when Girard pulled me by my arm I kind of tripped with my steps.

I was not able to get out of the shock, her face and that traumatizing nights I passed crying for her came back as a flash in front of me. "Will you care to explain to us what the heck is going on? And why is that girl here too!" Dad exclaimed. He meant her, my fake wife by the word 'girl'.

I was papa's replica. Be it words or looks, I looked like his carbon copy. Listening him talk with so much anger for a moment i sensed as if that was me only who was shaking in irritation on seeing her here all of a sudden.

Girard have not replied to him till now. He only bobbed his head with a sigh while he led us to a room that was totally empty. The walls were painted cream with the pictures of all the great presidents and fighters of the country.

Having us seated on the long benches in, what it seemed like waiting room, my expectedly unexpectable brother spoke, "Alright, so far I am sure you guys are able to draw some meaning out whatever happened outside, there." he took a pause like it was required to prepare whatever he was going to disclose to us now. "I would like to clear all your confusion. Please, dad and mom and you Rave, don't be too harsh on me or on her after you hear the disclosure." Dad grunted learning that he was playing round and round with us.

We were already not in the mood to decode riddles or solve puzzles. The early morning visit to the court with the appearance of unwanted faces was driving all if crazy. So crazy that now, even mom began hissing in anger. Even then my bruvver decided to play puzzles with us.

"Just spill it out already, Gerr!" with a long breath releasing amidst his oink dad rolled his eyes.

He was a heck of impatient man before me.

"Okay, so guys..." Girard pulled an armless chair across us and quickly occupied it. "The reason why we are here is— Billy's custody case. Kiara wants to reopen the case and fight it again. She

has got some proofs with the help of his nanny against Shania that proves she doesn't deserve to keep him with herself. And WE. ARE. HERE. FOR. THE SAME." I have not been able to come of a shock yet, that another shock was dawned on me.

She really came here for that?

Why?

Who told her to?

Why all of a sudden she wants to do this. It that because she feels guilty seeing my son suffer or because she misses the lavish life I gave her!

No no, she will not come to me for luxury as I am sure Payton must have fulfilled all her wishes with his money. He was now sitting on the position which once I possessed. No one can deny, he was really striving to win her love.

Or was she planning on taking some other advantage out of my helplessness! She can do that, as she was able to do quite a lot of things beyond my imagination.

But not again. No matter what her intentions truly are, I will not let her hurt my baby with her actions no more. With the determination of not letting do anything wrong to Billy, I dragged myself out of the bench in order to go outside.

"Rave! Stop, Rave." I was about to cross the door when I was stopped by Girard.

He tried to convince me with baby reasons but I won't listen. He told me why she was doing it and also the future she wishes to live with us since she was guilty but I WON'T LISTEN.

It was all I a lie... I know that.

It has always been a lie.

"NO Girard, not now. I don't care if it is for Billy is fucking not, I just know, she left us when we relied on her. I just remember her revenge and those sleepless nights I spent with my son before he was gone from my arms. I just remember her words she told me that night while you and I were searching for her maniacly." My last strand of patience broke recollecting those memories again.

" I know everything, Rave. But try as and understand... You both—"

"It's not US any more... Not US... It's just her and me now. Not US!" I interrupted him.

I wished not to recall them but all I can do was see them coming back to my mind back to back. "Have you forgotten that night, Girard? I cried for her... I even said that I would take all of her punishments she would give me. I begged for her mercy, Girard. I begged for the sake of my son. She wanted to see me feel the pain— sense the pain she had felt while I left her through Billy... She intended to hurt him, not me. Her sole mission was just to hurt my baby so that I

can be hurt too! I would praise her brains, Girard. She caught my weakness, mashed it under her grip and threw it. Do you still want me to try to understand everything!" My voice came out merely as a whisper.

I was too broke from inside. Her every word, every smile, every tear drop mattered to me until that day. That day I determined to myself that I will never fall for her traps any more.

Never.

~~~~~

"NOOO... THIS IS UNFAIR... THIS IS AN UNFAIR CALL, YOU BRUTE!" My heart throbbed watching Shania fall on the floor of the court room before the judge after he passed his verdict.

The judge looked extremely insulted by her words that warned her father with a warning gaze from the judge of the court, "Mr. Avram, your daughter aggrieved this court enough with her words. Now before we consider taking her under remand for disregarding this session, please take her out of the court room. Also, the court would like to request Master. Billy's nanny to hand him over to his father and mother Mr. And Mrs. Carter." This outraged Shania, and she screamed louder and louder while I helplessly stood in the witness box with my fake wife— as a couple.

She apologetically stared me with her tear filled eyes antecedently she ran out of the area to Billy's nanny. "Oh Billy, mamma told you she will take you with her soon. See we are together again." A lonely tear trickled below my stubble cheek seeing how my son smiled in her arms. He real attached to her.

"Please give me my son back... Please, I am his mother. Billyyyyy!" Despite her screams and whining Shania was dragged out of the doors by her father while I can only give her a last glance as she stared me offensively like it was me because of whom Billy was taken away from her.

But who to tell her that I was not the one to do it.

Despite of my disagreement and disapproval I was never allowed to leave the waiting room unless the same advocate who got me married to that woman arrived, he was my formerly appointed lawyer for Billy's case, and he was only fighting it now.

My parents were too blind with the love of their grandson hence it was easy to convince them. One sentence addressed to them, and they bobbed their skulls permitting them for the further plan my brother and that woman made.

In Fact, she easily gave up on the hurt they felt seeing her face. Her one tear drop and they melted forgetting all the pains I had gone through. First Girard then mom and dad. All in all my entire family was trapped within her net.

After putting all the proofs and hearing by the nanny who took care of my son, the judge passed his verdict in his father's— that's me, interest. Ultimately, I won tie case and my son was back to me nevertheless, a look of her face and again all the hurt and those revenge talks occupied me.

I cannot stand that moment. Although my eyes cried looking how my son laughed and played with her yet it looked like the worst thing to me. As after having him suffered so much she was trying to be his super Mamma! So fake... No doubts why I married her contractually.

"Paa-ppaa" Billy called me on his 'step' mother's instructions as she pointed out her finger towards me. "Paapa" he called again nevertheless, I only threw dagger at her not sparing anyone any glance and followed the path that Shania left through.

She can control my son but not me!

Tbc...

## Chapter 55. You don't see my pain

After that leave Raven never visited his parents' house to see Billy. That Night Kiara cried to herself hugging her son to her chest as she did manage to get him back to herself but his father, she could not get him at all.

He was damn angry on her.

It was justified though.

Kiara can comprehend as to what was holding him back. Firstly, she left them in the hardships and when her guilt was eating her for the blunder she made, she came back.

Although the entire Carter family forgave her there was her husband who was still maintaining distance from her. "Morning uh, m-mom!" Her eyes were red and puffy, Mrs. Carter forced a smile recognizing them.

She must have cried the whole night!

Actually after exiting the court behind Raven, she hugged Billy close to herself not knowing where to go. The home that was supposedly the one Raven had made for his perfect family was not open for her. It was assured right at the moment he dashed out of the court.

And Kiara was so ashamed of going to that house which he created for his family. She can only helplessly stare Payton for help assuming that her in-law may not take her in their house too. But when she was going to go to Payton's car, Mr. Carter held her wrist and stopped her. "You are our daughter in law... I won't appreciate our daughter in law staying with another man. Sit in the car" Kiara didn't know whether to be happy or sad.

She just immediately settled inside the car taking her father in law's words seriously. He never mentioned that, but he was clear that he wanted her back in the family. Although Kiara could not see off Payton properly, she only gave him a good bye smile whilst she let her bundle of joy play with the button of her shirt.

Once they in the house, she realized these guys never stopped loving her! Yeah, Mr. Carter kissed her forehead and Billy's soon after they entered their house. He also shed few tears of happiness saying, "Thank you for coming back. I thought we lost you forever" It only reminded her of her mistake.

No matter what, they happily accepted her just on one condition. And that was— bringing their Raven back who was lost somewhere in the darkness of the past.

"Hey you've been crying?" questioned Mrs. Carter touching Kiara's face.

Her skin was burning with fever. When kiara nodded her head to lie her eyes automatically Welker up watching how her mother in law was examining her neck and forehead. "Ugh, you

are in fever. What is wrong with you sweetheart!" She exclaimed dragging kiara towards her room.

On the other hand, Kiara was stunned hearing her call her a sweetheart. She was the best mother in law the nature can give her. So selfless and understanding. She did not even question her about anything. All she said the last night was, "Let the past stay in the past, honey. Struggle to maintain your present with Raven and wait for the beautiful future. There is so much to cherish."

Her words motivated her however, Kiara was too depressed to let her go of her past. She cried and cried and cried throughout the night unless the depression took the shape of fever engulfing her body.

"Lay down... Lay down honey." She carefully covered Kiara with the quilt, she placed Billy away from her in order to prevent him getting her fever.

Kiara felt hurt when Billy was drawn out of her reach. She wanted to cry. And Mrs. Carter who noticed her growing paleness she informed her, "Little babies catch fever quick enough from their mothers. It's for his own good. And you need not worry I will not separate him." She caressed Kiara's cheek.

"Mom what happened? Why you called me so urgently" Raven stumbled between his run towards the couch where her parents were sitting.

He looked real grave like he was given the biggest shock of his life. The real shock it indeed was when his mother dropped him a message that stated,

'Oh Raven, please come home at once. Kiara's fallen sick out of depression. She is burning in fever and the doctor has only asked to keep her tension free to avoid any more sickness.

We both know it's because of your lack of attention on her. Please, just for the sake of Billy come home. He has fallen silent seeing Kiara in bed. I can't let him near her, it is dangerous for his health as he has just woken up from sick bed few months ago.

She cried throughout the other night. Please, come home and attend her. Your anger is understandable dear, but please don't do something that you'd regret later.

Give her a chance, FOR BILLY... FOR US. Come home soon.'

It was a fully fledged message like an email given on WhatsApp.

Raven though each and every carefully, yet he behaved like he hardly read a few sentences.

"You sounded so serious on the chats. Everything alright!" speaking emotionlessly Raven asked taking a seat next to his father.

From the inside, he was dying to see her face. Hug her tight and kiss her until she's out of oxygen but the anger was so intense which forced him to keep it hidden within himself. She deserved his thanks but forgiveness.

"Didn't you read my message!" Cocking a brow in suspect, his mother asked.

"No, I didn't have the time. I just... Uh I just read her being sick. That's all." Raven lied.

"Ugh, Rave she is damn guilty of her acts. You both are equal now. You abandoned her, she left you. Now don't you think you need to keep aside your ego" It was supposed to be said in order to make him realize his mistake but it only enraged him.

Raven sarcastically laughed, his eyes growing red and dark with forming tears. "You call this ego, mom? Like seriously?" He got up from the seat taking steps in the backward direction as he still stared at his parents. "Leaving me before my son's custody case was justified! Letting him go his psycho mother was justified! Hurting both of us with her pathetic words was justified!" He gulped his saliva feeling suffocated.

He came here with the sole motive of meeting her. After reading his mother's message over and over again, he ultimately changed his mind and decided to see her. But surprisingly, something else was waiting for him in the house.

"Hold on, Rave. Just hold on" His father tried to clutch his arm and seize his movements, Raven only showed him a palm moving backwards.

"You don't see my pain... You don't! The joy of getting your grandchild has blinded you so much that you can't see what damage has she done to both of us in the past." Raven spoke turning around to leave.

He was on the doorstep when a loud cry of Billy echoed in the hall, and he panicked. "Billy" His mind blanked. He can't think of anything but run to the room where it came— his fake wife's room!

Tbc...

## Chapter 56. How can I not believe that nothing happened!

He halted on the door looking at the scene before him. There was nothing he could say as his son was actually crying because her uncle Girard has held him within his arms not letting him go to his mamma. She was on the bed looking extremely sick with red eyes and yellowish pale skin. There was a bottle of glucose hanging on the bedside while the pipe kept attached to the back of her wrist. Who would tell his stubborn son what was up with her.

He cried kicked and bit Girard on the shoulder agitated by his action of preventing him from his mamma.

But when little Billy caught the sigh of his startled father at the door step, "Pappa... Pappa" he faked a cry pushing Girard away from himself and got down of the bed carefully.

Just as his little body pushed itself down the bed's edge like a mountaineer trying to descend to the earth, Raven let his tears flow. "Pappa.... Mamma..." he was though two years old he still can't talk properly. The sickness affected his two years of life that he cannot learn how to speak since he was all this while on the bed lifeless.

However, today when Raven found his little champ pouting and throwing himself in his arms feeling offended, he cried and used his arms to accuse his uncle. "Gia... Pappa, Gia" He pointed at his serenely smiling uncle who was satisfyingly staring the father and the son's reunion after a long time. But this time this reunion was forever.

Girard never spoke a word. He gave a assuring glance to Kiara who grew nervous looking at her husband after the court scene with stupored eyes. She hated seeing Girard leave the two of them alone with their son. She Panicked when he took his parents with him.

They were completely alone.

Minutes passed but Raven could not leave Billy while he continued whining and talking to his with his broken language. He was relieved seeing his baby back. Raven then rose with Billy in his arms. He still avoided setting his gaze on her face.

Kiara was waiting for his one look, she impatiently waited to see him giving her a view. That was the only way she can get to know whether he still loved her or not. However, when she saw him placing Billy beside her on the pillow and turning around, her eyes widened with new tears.

He had not considered her important enough to even give a glance. So was that how they were supposed to end up! Without talking to each and without clearing the distance between them.

No, seemed Kiara was not ready as she had wrapped her fingers around his wrist and stopped him. "Please..." she whispered. She wanted to tell so many things, so many sorries nevertheless she felt weak. "Don't leave... T-talk to me." Ultimately gathering some bravery she stated her feeling verbally.

Her tears steamed out not ceasing at all. She was scared. She was scared that he might shove away her hand and walk out thus leaving her mourning over her mistake. At least that was what she deserved.

But to her surprise, he waited. He sat on the edge of the bed with Billy laying on the bed with Kiara's phone like a wall therefore, creating a safe distance from each other.

He did not speak. Rather Raven waited for her to say something. He was clear on his part, but she wasn't. She had a lot to explain to him and his heart impatiently waited hoping to listen whether she was still his. Was she still his innocent Kiara.

Those days spent with Payton in his house was eating Raven. He burned in the fire of envy feeling cheated. Was she still pure and his Kiara only!

She had sensed him waiting for her explanation, so with a few quick breaths Kiara began, "I am sorry. I never intended to hurt Billy. It was for hurting you. I thought it will give you the idea how much I cried when you left me. But little did I know that— it will leave me hurt! After I went to Serbia with Payton.. I... I realized I... I committed the biggest mistake of my life... I... I just broke my house with my fists." He only forced a smile since he knew the former part. There was nothing new disclosed so Raven once again moved to leave.

But just like the last time Kiara once again held her wrist ab made him sit down, "I saw you and Billy separating after the verdict was given in Shania's name. I thought I would give me joy but it only left me crying and shouting in the nights. I was... I was trying to get tempted by Payton's romantic moves. He was trying harder to woo me..." Raven growled hearing the last sentence. It only hurt him more than before.

She was getting onto the part which he wasn't looking forward to hearing. Does she think that it will melt him! No, if was only burning his heart. But Kiara has to say.. He will have to listen to whatever happened in her life within these months.

"I will not refuse I was impressed by his efforts. Every day, he did something new for me but all I can do was smile and turn him down. I swear every time he did something new my heart only reminded me of you. I can't get over the love you gave me. I know you think I am changed... I really am... But trust me, I never stopped loving you. I was... I was possessed by anger." Kiara whispered, her lips trembled feeling his burning gaze on her face.

Her dread grew more when Billy went down of the bed to play with toys in the corner of the room. She was somewhere happy though as there was no obstacle between her and him.

"I was crazy and wanted to seek a revenge on you but Raven... Keep yourself in my place and think... Think that if after dumping you in college I had met you just for the sake of my son who was from the man you hated, how had you felt? You would have killed both me and my son out of your fury. I just wished to do the same but I couldn't. (pause) Right after a day of running away from your house— our house, I regretted everything I did. I swear I do regret yet." She was not yet done with her words when Raven clutched the back of her neck pulling their faces closer.

Their breaths mingled with their eyes gazing each other. His eyes were intensely ripping through her soul while her soft and scared ones watched the blood vessels that were visible in his eyes. He gritted his teeth while Kiara grasped as their lips almost brushed.

"You were angry right, you could have killed me. I hadn't minded getting murdered either. You could have ripped my chest and pulled my heart then chopping it into pieces. If that was not hard then you could have simply burned me alive Kiara... Why Billy? Why Billy though!" Suddenly his grip around the back of her neck loosened.

Raven's head fell on her shoulder as his arm slowly pulled her into him. "You shattered me totally, that night. I don't think I'd have ever cried like that in my whole life. Not even when I lost my daughter." There was hurt, immense hurt dripping from every word Raven spoke. "I am not angry on you... I can never be Kiara. And clearly your doubts, even after doing so much wrong I never stopped loving you. You want to know why? Because you brought my son back to life. That was you why I can see my son smiling... That was you why he smiled... That was You, why he recovered. You can still punish me if you want but, leaving my son to die was the stupidest revenge you played to hurt me." He stopped, letting her go with a grunt Raven hit his fist on the mattress. He was sobbing now.

"I am sorry... Please forgive me." She whispered sobbing as well.

Nevertheless, his words spoken next, perplexed her to no extent. "how can I forget you Kiara when I know you spent months in another man's house."

"Raven! You are doubting me" She can say it loudly at all even though he was doubting her loyalty.

"How can I not believe that nothing happened between the two of you ever?" he sarcastically stated, hurting her.

"Alright, go ahead, undress me and see if I cheated on you or not" She was confident alas, he only took it in the wrong way.

"Sorry, I don't do bitches... At least that's what you are for me now." Kiara stilled in the bed, her eyes never leaving the sight of his face. "He is a fool, Kiara Diaz... Not me! Not me." Raven hushed near her lips before he walked out of the room leaving Kiara shocked and surprised.

This was the second time she saw him jealous like that! Still, she forced her lips to smile and adored Billy playing with teddy. The first time it had happened in the college when a guy took her on the dance floor to dance during their second year's party. Her only mistake was that she let him hush something near her ear.

He was so angry... So fucking angry that he left the party at once. When she went to look for him and thankfully found him sitting in the garden grumbling to himself, she approached him. But he was so angered that he almost killed her by kissing her roughly in the college's garden being jealous and also called her a bitch.

"So the reason behind your cold behaviour is jealousy not the anger. I should have known that." Kiara smiled as something struck her mind determining that—

Within twenty four hours from now, she would make him her once again!

Let's see how far she keeps her words.

Tbc...

## Chapter 57. When I talk to you— look at me

Kiara's point of view...

The life was giving me a second chance. It was not yet clear but I have seen it... It was my chance— chance to ask for my husband's forgiveness.

He was mad at me for staying at another man's house. But how to make him believe we stayed in two different rooms in the same house. Payton is not that bad which he was in the college. He is a changed man now.

But for raven, he was still the old guy who was just trying to woo his girlfriend turned into wife.

Any ways, I have seen it in his eyes he was not angry... He was just jealous. And if what I have deciphered true, than tonight will the night of our togetherness. I will make him mine again.

I have changed to take revenge, now I will change myself to get him back in life. And I really mean it.

~~~

"So finally we are back to our home Billy. Our sweet home!" I squealed feeling that unusual breeze of contentment hit me.

As I stepped with Billy inside the foyer of the house where I was bought after our marriage, memories hit me harshly. The house when I enjoyed the best moments and also, the house that I left for vengeance.

I felt my hair on the skin rising in amusement. I was back to my house... Our house. That belong to only and only us.

"Mamma" Billy squirmed in my arms whining to get out of my hold.

I put him down only to see hi running behind the couch and hide there. He was in the mood to play. "Where is my Billy. Are you there behind the couch?" I spoke in a baby voice joining him in his game.

His ticklish laugh filled the air turning the silent abode of my billionaire husband a real home. I wish if he were here to see this. I wish if he could catch this moment and see his son moving around the house filled with the strength.

This was what he always desired to see before I came to his life. Now that it was really fulfilling he was not there. At least that is what I have assumed until I noticed Billy coming out of his

hiding place and take a sprint passing by me and hug the knees of the person who was standing at the doorstep.

"Papa, y-ya chame" (Papa you came) He was hugging his father who I don't know, have stood there for how long!

My vessels again pumped with my blood rushing through them vigorously. What I wished happened— he was finally here cherishing this lovely moment. But the looks of his face conveyed that he never expected me to visit his house.

"Hi baby, yes papa is here." He bent down on the knees placing a trail of kisses from his hair to his cheeks.

He picked up, his eyes smiling with joy unless they turned to face me. No sooner they rested them on my body, they turned cold and ridiculous towards me. He was smiling a second ago whilst talking to his son but now as he looked away from his face and spared me a view, he looked at me with apprehension and disgust.

Trust me, his cold look killed my heart. I could not feel anything good but disgusted. When he trailed his eyes up and down my body, he looked ever ridiculed than the previous time.

My conscience felt insulted. I wanted to scream and tell him to stop that cold behaviour but I could not. Right after setting my foot within the boundaries of his abode my legs have gone jelly.

I felt like the old Kiara he has come to this house for the first time— timid and nervous, who can cry on any topic.

He made me feel like the Kiara who loved to get his love and enjoy his attention.

But now, the attention he was showering me with was not pleasing. It was rather piercing holes in my soul.

"Go and play!" he let Billy down with a chaste kiss on his cheek.

The corner of his lips twitched watching his son walk inside the kitchen in the left and examine it. Raven adored Billy's antiques when he opened the door of the fridge and cooed feeling the coolness hit his little body before he began his exploration.

"So predictable of you, Kiara Diaz" suddenly his hoarse voice hit my ear drums, I can feel his warm breaths on my neck.

While I was looking at Billy, he took the opportunity and stood across me with a tilted head. He was intently gazing my neck. His eyes were scanning down my cleavage and lingered his eyes there. He was looking for marks on my body. Payton's teeth mark, to make sure if I was still his!

But how to tell him, I was and will always be his.

I never stopped loving him even though I was angry and burning in the flames of revenge.

"Raven" I can only whisper when his fingers held my top from the neck side while he peeped inside my top.

He slid his other hand inside my top from below and pulled my bra down looking at my breasts for marks. It was kind of insulting since he was literally checking my body for any sort of love bite or hickey that could prove his mentality about me while I was away in Payton's house.

It felt filthy, I can sense him going crazy over the gazing my breasts. We have hardly started enjoying our sexual life when I decided to execute the real revenge plan. But Raven being himself, the rude and envious boyfriend he was in the college, he preferred letting me go with a jerk like he had not needed me ever.

"I knew it... You will use my son to get into my house. Why won't you? After all you know all my wishes and desires and whatever I've had expected from this house" he got a few strands of my hair inhaling them with hoarseness.

My heart was pounding inside my chest. The thumping was so loud that I was sure he can hear them since he was so close to me. My eyes moved to look at Billy removing few bars of chocolates from the first section and place them on the floor however, I cannot admire him as my furious husband wanted all my attention just on him.

He was so much more vexed that he almost pulled me by my head. His fingers dug in my hair and pulled me by the scalp. Our faces were too close that I can't breathe without warning his lips with my hot breaths. I saw him blinking frequently whenever my raged breaths fanned his face.

Raven howled nearly stopping my inhalation with his deep breath. "Look at me when I talk to you" he expressed his annoyance plastering a rough smooch on my lips.

That wasn't our first kiss after our union. I wanted it to be smooth so that I can feel him, touch him and get that sense of belonging again. But mere touch of our lips that difficultly lasted for few seconds left me moan in apprehension.

I was not yet sure whether he really wanted me or not. His actions were enticing but his eyes, they were puncturing holes through my soul. The way his fingers pulled my head, my hair ached at the stretch. He has literally cocoons his fingers in the trap of my thick hair.

"When I talk to you— Look at me" I slightly nodded over his alarming tone.

We were still sailing on a boat that had no hope of returning to the seashore. His darkening intense eyes were messing with my comfort zone around him.

After two and half years I was feeling the old Raven glaring me enviously. He was acting as the same old harsh and dominating Raven who loved controlling my life. He loved seeing me do things that pleased him more rather than the ones who left him yearn and hiss in anger.

I would be angry for that behaviour of his in the past but today, even that seemed so turning on to me. That is what I missed all this while. And having it return with more energy and rudeness, I was liking it.

"Are we clear on that?" he asked me with a high pitched warning ringing within his interrogation.

I had brought myself to push my head swiftly to agree with him but at the same time his phone rang and I heaved a sigh. His eyes were off my face for a while, not for a long time though. He unwrapped my hair from around his fingers and took the phone. His other hand never left my waist.

The way he was replying it felt like the call was from his office.

Once he finished the conversation he moved back to me once again. "We are not done yet, we continue this once I come back." he spoke and left me standing there clueless.

However, it was 7.13 pm in the evening. I wonder why he has to go now! But never mind, when he will return he's going to get a surprise.

Tbc...

Chapter 58. He's turned you into a sex addict

Third person's point of view...

She was waiting for him without keeping her attention occupied by any other stuff. It was 12.15 am in the night, Billy was sleeping soundly in his baby cradle located beside the bed on a distance. The room was illuminating with dim lights while Kiara walked to and fro around the balcony waiting for his car to catch her glimpse.

They were supposed to talk. She was prepared doing what she has planned. Alas, there was no sign of him anywhere. She was ready to take the bull by the horns but her badass husband was seeing to it that she suffered.

Not only had he blocked her phone number but also warned anyone to give her his location. Kiara tried talking to Girard and his answer was as expectedly— useless.

But she knew he was lying. Her billionaire husband must have told him beforehand to not take any of her calls and if they were taken then not to answer her questions directly.

She also prepared food for him with the thoughts that he might be back within fifteen minutes or more nevertheless, when he took more than an hour, she understood it was done on a purpose. Raven Carter, was trying to punish her this way.

No matter what, Kiara was determined to reduce all the gaps between them and start a fresh new life from the next morning. She had promised herself to get him forgive her within twenty four hours. And not on any cost would she let it slip away from her hands.

It was at the same time when Kiara was caressing Billy's hair that the noise of car hit her ears. She smiled feeling relieved. He was back finally. Her legs automatically sprinted down the staircase and watch him enter through the door looking tired.

Her feet stopped across him while her chest rose and fell while her pupils read his weariness on the face. "Uh, you're late today. Was something important that caught you up?" She tried to sound normal like a normal wife, but as she has known him, he simply rolled his eyes walking past by her and off the stair in their room.

Kiara followed him. He was purposely making things difficult, yet she put her best efforts into it in attempt to bring the train of their lives back on track!

'What the heck is he doing inside? It's been thirty minutes to him now'

Tapping her foot impatiently on the floor Kiara was settled in the couch across the bed. She was now losing her calm. This guy was testing her too much.

Her lips were busy cursing him under the breaths when suddenly the door of the wash room thud opened while walked out of it with a towel covering his lower body. There was water drops dripping from the strands of his loose hair hanging above his forehead.

Raven looked like a heck of tasty meal with his body wet and slightly tanned skin appearing like a torture to Kiara's throbbing heart. She always shied seeing him naked. He was though not fully naked, a part of heart still jumped in fear.

While she has seized making any movements and stared him, Raven wore a loose pair of track pants and utilized the towel wrapping his lower body in drying his hair. "So pathetic of you? You behave as if you never saw a naked man. Don't tell Payton never showed you anything all these days!!!" her mouth grasped forming into an O as Kiara ultimately registered his words and got up.

Her steps were slow and trembling. She any way reached him gulped her saliva as she corrected him, "First of all, I am not please stop behaving so rudely towards me Raven, that is hurting me. And how many times do I have to tell you that---" Her throat dried suddenly when he pulled her the waist and brought his face closer to her.

"Now say what were you saying?" Raven groaned harshly rubbing his rough palms on her skin under the top.

She was wearing that same light cotton white top as that of the evening. It was tightly hugging her body, but he can see she was comfortable in that as the cloth material was very soft and nice.

Kiara was not a dumb, on the other hand. She nevertheless spoke that out, but she can see he was Just trying to make things turn awkward so that she would walk out feeling uncomfortable. But what he did not know was that she had already made up her mind to do what she has planned.

"I w-was saying I and Payton n-never had anything as you are thinking. We stayed in the same roof but in different rooms. I am still---" looks like he had all the evil ideas in his brain that was supposed to make things hard for her.

Not even have she finished her words when Raven picked her up by the waist and threw her on the bed. "If what I am thinking is wrong than prove it!" It was more like a command than an exclamation.

Raven came over her body like a predator. His hands grabbed her forearm while he pressed his wet lips on her soft ones. He bit and sucked them mercilessly. While he poured all his buried emotions of his heart in the kiss his hands on the contrary worked on her breasts.

He pinched and cupped them so tightly that the prints of his fingers may have occurred on her skin. He ripped open her top from the side of her cleavage and dug his head within the valley between her breasts.

Her scent was as usual—arousing and yearning. Perhaps what she has said was right too! When Raven pulled her bra in two pieces away from her twin bosoms he can see her skin was fresh as it was when he first saw her naked.

White and milky without any sign of any sort mark on them, he got a boost and smiled softly that she could not notice. Her breaths were uneven and eyes shut close. He savoured her feared expressions for moment before he attacked on her hardened nipple biting and pulling it with his teeth. The other hand of his pressed against the twin and squeezed it only to receive a satisfying scream from her.

Raven quickly removed the remaining clothes from her body. He parted her thighs while in the process he pinched her inner thighs as the thoughts of her betrayal he recalled once again.

It did nothing good but increased his harshness on her. Raven pushed her inner thighs apart from each other and dug his head between her legs. "Aaah!" Kiara screamed when his hot tongue dived within the hole of her womanhood.

He bit her several times only to receive high pitched moans from her. He made sure she has aroused by his acts completely. And when she was indeed swimming in the ocean of pure ecstasy, he let her go. His lips held an unknown smirk while he stared her with a different gaze.

Kiara was totally out of thoughts not knowing what happened to him all of a sudden that he stopped. She could never have understood that unless he slapped her bosoms with a hard hit and spoke across her face, the cruel and harsh words ever told, "I knew it all! I knew it you will react like that to my advances. Payton has turned you into a sex addict bitch with his hard thrusts afterall. So pathetic!"

Tbc...

Chapter 59. Their love won!

It came as a shock to Kiara. She stiffened her body under his pressure while emotions built within her. She was speechless running dry with words and empty with courage. Her fingers around his shoulder s loosened and came across her chest. She suddenly felt like a fish drawn out of the water and thrown of muddy ground to suffer.

She was still in daze that her eyes several times blinked. Had she imagined him saying that! She asked herself while her lung blew and such long breaths. Raven though was not in any mood of pretending it was her imagination. The way he got back on his legs and faced the open windows of their room, his tongue spoke again, "I just proved your swears wrong, Kiara. You said you were pure, didn't you? If you were pure why would you yearn to my sexual advances like that" he raised his eye brow giving her thought looks.

Kiara who in the pink of her health suddenly grew pale. She immediately covered herself with the sheet that was spread on the bed and stood behind his back, holding her tears back. "I know you are hurt and you don't want to trust me easily but please, don't doubt my dignity" She stated feeling blue.

She can understand he was angry on her and his curses and indefinite blames were justified too. But it was not acceptable to be called a deceiver. Yep, she did deceive him in a way but not as bad as he assumed it. She never decided his trust of a husband. She was as pure as the cries of a new born baby.

"Oh cut the crap, Kiara Diaz! I am done with your lies and tears. Please don't show them to me. They don't affect me now" he snapped on her face after turning around to see her.

Kiara clutched the sheet around her breasts feeling pathetic of herself. She suffered enough, now she wanted some love. And that love can only come from his attention. "Please just forgive me Raven. I swear I got my lessons. I won't do anything like this in the future but please don't treat me like that more. Please hug me" She begged him, her arms snaking around his left elbow again.

He was turning pale himself. Raven wanted her to suffer as much he did but her grievous tone was breaking the chains of his coldness. He was feeling like a lost bird who wanted to go back to home to his people but can't do anything as his mind was blank.

There was silence for about a minute, the two of the maintained that position for as long as they can remember until Raven's mind struck with cruelty. He pushed Kiara away from him and screamed a blue murder, "How low will you stoop woman! Can't you see or you are you purposely pushing me to insult you more. Just go away, I don't want you. I don't want a deceiving bitch like you." He blurted out under the control of his anger.

Raven's facial expressions drastically changed realizing what he just uttered. He regretted saying that out as Kiara loosened her grip around his elbow. She turned to watch a sleepy Billy moving restlessly in his cradle. He was affected by his father's roar but managed to go back to sleep once again.

Regardless, Kiara was totally browned off now. Brownd off of his accusations, brownd off of the disgust rushing through her body. She was so wrong coming back to him, he proved that today.

"Kiara..." Seeing her take back steps with a blank face, he whispered her name, guilt lacing his voice.

However Kiara was in another zone. She felt gruesome of his words. No doubts, she was wrong on her part. But she was guilty. What else do someone need other than a person to realize his mistakes and die in guilt! Raven Carter, here was an exception. He wanted more than her guilt.

"You are right... I am a pathetic woman..." Kiara said recalling his words.

"Look I am... I am sorry... I crossed my limits" He raised his hand to touch her wrist, but she walked back.

"No, please don't feel sorry. That's me who needs to be sorry for hurting you, for making your son suffer, for destroying your life and for everything." She screamed at the end with high pitch cry.

Raven was shaken, he stared her trembling body and died mentally feeling sick of himself. He again struggled to take a hold of her wrist, yet she pushed his hands away with a jerk. "Abuse me Raven, that's what I deserve. If yearning for your touch after a guilty conscience makes me a bitch then I am a bitch. If attempting to save our broken bond makes me a bitch then I am a bitch. If bringing Billy back to our lives makes me a bitch then I am a fucking bitch. If loving you unconditionally makes me bitch then I am a bitch, Raven. I am a bitch" She cried taking deep breaths.

Her body fell on the floor while she seemed as white as a sheet. "I hate myself for loving you so much. Wish I had never come back to you." Kiara spoke slowly, Raven who was struggling to handle her outburst fumed in vex as soon as he caught her last sentence.

He sat across her while his fingers grilled her shoulders and pulled her close. "What did you just say?" he pulled her closer such that she was sitting on his lap, their lips brushing badly and naked chest colliding with each other. "Dare saying that again and you will be dead. I am not letting you go away from me now. Not when you once again brought Billy back in the pink." He grumbled slowly, his hands slowly wrapping around her waist.

Tears from Kiara's cheek drip on her lips. They slid down the bump of his lips under his chin as his irises intently watched her. He can't hold himself back, "I am sorry. Please help me fetch

over this hollow feeling. I want to live a happily ever after with you." Raven burst into tears taking Kiara by surprise.

She blinked her wet lashes watching him closely. Her lips pressed together in a thin line since believing his break down was next to impossible. Kiara quickly pulled him in a hug, her sobs mingled with his as the two damaged birds struggled to get some solace in each other's arms. "Shh! It's okay... It's okay. I am here only, Raven. I will not go anywhere away from you. You are my only family. I won't leave you till death do us apart" her that statement, and they were fidgeting to kiss each other passionately.

Raven pulled away the sheet from her body roaming his hands all the way more along her naked body. He shamelessly pinched and pressed her hand waist like there was no tomorrow. Finally, their love won.

Tbc...

Chapter 60. Unexpected crash

While the living beings were sleeping soundly in their beds Payton sat in the empty lounge of Seattle Airport alone. He was waiting for his private jet to occur that was about to come. On the other hand, his mind yearned to message Raven and Kiara and wish them a good luck before leaving.

He was going back to Serbia, this time forever. Although her love was incomplete, yet he was happily going back with some of the good memories stoked up in his brain. He was happy for uniting the couple he grew up seeing since the college began. The two of them were college darlings and meant to be together.

But the life played according to its game and after some separation and drama it finally brought the two of them together. Together a happy family they seemed awesome. He can't admire their love for a limit, it was limitless.

Any ways, his part as cupid was done, his role was finished and now the time for farewell has come finally. Payton messaged his guard for updates. He asked why was the jet taking so much time coming here. And the reply came,

'Sorry sir, there seems some problem with occurring in the main engine. The pilot has refused to fly the plane. We will have to delay your trip of tonight as the weather forecast mentioned heavy is expected in the early morning. I request you go back home, I will see what can be done!'

He grumbled chipping an inaudible 'what the fuck' in his breath. Surprisingly the airport was also empty like nobody had any flight to catch, and he was the only busy man sitting here. Not even was there a single human around him just the sound on the intercom flared for the flights those were about to start after few hours or two.

"Come on Payton, let's take a long drive" He got up and dragged the luggage outside the airport with him.

Within no minute he called his driver whom he had sent away with apologies and drove it to an isolated area with main road on one side and a cliff on the other side. However, before halting there, Payton dropped the driver to his apartment! That was a new thing about him. The old Payton was selfish but the new one was an impressive gentleman.

Never mind, with a weary sigh he came near the cliff staring at the twinkling stars. They were intimidating him with their presence. Same like Kiara, they brought a smile on her face. However, it was not a good thing to think about her. She was back to her husband and her family. Probably, struggling to win his trust back!

She did stay so many days with him that surely Raven would doubt her. But that was not her concern as today or tomorrow he'd be accepting her anyway. His son would be the middle man in their relationship.

"Life seems so boring!" Payton talked to himself as he leaned across a huge rock enjoying the night view.

He was engrossed in the beautiful night play of the stars that he missed seeing a car hit right within his and crash it. "What the fuck!!!" browned off at the realization, he quickly approached his car looking mad.

Was the driver drunk or was he blind that he can't see a brand new car parked on the side of the road!

He burned in the fury of exasperation when low flames appeared from with the hood of the car that crashed with his. Black smoke surrounded both the car indicating that it was not going to take any more minute from a blast. He panicked for the driver as he had not come outside.

The windows of the crashed car was charcoal black, and he can't see who was inside. He breathed deeply while at the same moment he pulled open the door and peeped in, "Shit!" he was speechless and dumbstruck recognizing who it was inside.

"Shania!" Payton heard the feeble noise of sparkling sparks and quickly pulled an injured Shania outside the car.

She was drunk and struggled to get free from his grip. He was holding her arm tight while his another hand pulled out from the waist. Payton held her tightly and with a swift move, he ran away from the sparkling cars. "Fuckkkk" he fell on the road with her under him as in the action of protecting her as the cars blasted, since they had not covered any distance that can prevent them from getting affected.

A part of the blasted car fell on Payton's head hence turning his eyes dark with black dots regardless, he strongly stayed put as Shania seemed covering into a layer of her own thick blood.

She was cursing and ranting someone (who else than Raven and Kiara) while her forehead oozed with unstoppable blood. Her crème colour dress has turned red with her blood as she was injured from the wrist side too. "NO! Shania..." Payton hissed disappointingly when his examination got him to the point where he realized, she had slit both of her wrists.

"Hey, look at me. Shania, look at me" Payton shook her shoulders in an attempt to keep her awake. She only laughed out loud followed by a loud scream and eventually burst into tears. "Eh, look at me. Don't close your eyes alright" he immediately pulled her blood stained body in his arms and ran towards the city.

He kept blabbering across her mouth in order to make sure she doesn't pass out. Payton stopped at a moment and tied one of her badly bruised wrists with hanky and the other one by tearing a part of her night gown and walked faster.

He was running by now however when he saw white foam coming out of her mouth while she coughed, his eyes widened in another awful realization! Not only had she slit her wrists but also consumed poison.

So it was a planned crash. She had crashed her car in his car with the motive of death. She wanted to die. Why so?

He was forced to think that.

Why on land would she commit suicide after irritating Raven and Kiara. Why would she want to die after hurting Billy. Why would she want to die years after her daughters death.

He any ways kept the thought aside and sped up. Luckily he spotted a taxi driver a few metres away. "Hey, heyyy!" Payton called him. He was probably parking his car as it was the early morning now.

No matter what Payton approached the man and told him, "Hey, hey, my friend attempted suicide. She's badly injured, I need to get her to the hospital please help" The driver though ranted initially but later he agreed when Payton threw a bungle of dollars on the front seat.

He was certain, he wouldn't let her die.

Tbc...

Chapter 61. Unveiling secrets and a broken Warrior

With the arrival of fresh morning new relationships came to life. The fresh breeze of the new beginning brushed Kiara's pale tired face. She stirred stretching her arms on her side. She trailed her palm on the side of the bed under her semi-conscious state. "Raven!" she sat on the bed with jolt as the side of the bed was empty.

She looked at the wash room but no voice came from inside. Billy was sleeping in his cradle while the windows was perfectly curtained so that no sun light can creep inside the room and disturb her sleep.

They were open in the last night. Raven may have closed them, but the question was, where was he?

Kiara's heard started throbbing loudly. Hasn't he decided to abandon her!

Many such emotions filled her heart, and she inhaled a deep breathe controlling her self. "What am I thinking!" she spoke to herself recalling their conversation they had before consummation.

Kiara was still scared. A part of her heart was freaked out not wanting to be left alone like previously but the same heart assured her, everything was right.

She looked for her phone hurriedly. Her fingers dig inside her pillow and pulled the phone out in a swift. She dialled Raven's number and waited. After three rings he picked the call, "Hello" Raven answered.

"H-hello, where are you?" Was all she asked whilst holding her heart.

She heard him excuse himself and take a nervous pause. Raven cleared his throat before he began, "I am at the hospital. Uh, actually... Shania attempted suicide. She is in a critical condition."

"What!!! Is she... Is she okay? What did the doctors say" She asked him while pulling herself out of the bed with the crumpled sheets around her body.

She sensed Raven another pause before he replied, "Nope. She is not okay. As I said, her condition is critical. She not only drank poison but also slit both of her wrists and crashed her car on the main road in the outskirts. Luckily, she crashed into Payton's car, so he immediately brought her to the nearest hospital." he sounded nervous.

However, it was another shock for Kiara. Firstly, the news of Her husband's ex-wife stunned her and then, the disclosure of Payton and his car being hit by Shania's, slipped the earth from beneath her feet. "What! Is Payton injured top?" she inquired crossing her fingers.

"NO, he was not in the car when she crashed hers into his. He was away and therefore he was able to take Shania to the hospital." Raven answered her.

Kiara was dazed, she did not want to trust that it was freaking real. This was because she was unknowingly the reason behind Shania's attempt to suicide. Although she felt extremely awful about it, she thanked the lord that Billy was not with her any more or else, he could have been there within their car too!

Never mind, after exchanging few more information Raven disconnected the call and heaved lightly. He walked back to where he had stood previously, beside Payton. "You think she'd make it?" asked Payton pulling the cuffs of his shirt up to his forearm.

He was unharmed. The piece of car that had hit him did give him never fading ache in his head though.

Raven looked at him tiringly while he swigged his saliva. He nervously chewed his bottom lip, "I am sure she will. She is a warrior." He answered, Payton nodded in second since he knows she was indeed a warrior. "That's right I and her never made a great couple but I never want her to have such end! I will do anything to save her, she's my child's mother, I won't let her die so easily." Payton impressively smiled at his answer.

He felt good hearing his words. Even after having shared an unsuccessful relationship, he was praying for her quick recovery and her well being.

(In the early evening)

The guys were famished and extremely exhausted. They sat across the wall on the floor next to operation theatre waiting for doctors to come out. They have been busy carrying out Shania's surgery.

In the mean time Raven also called her father who bust into tears on the other side of the phone. He had to go out of the town to attend an important meeting and during that phase, Shania attempted to kill herself.

The time was passing like a snail. Every minute looked like an hour. Raven and Payton sighed together until they saw the doctors walking out. Getting up quickly they gazed the tired team of doctors removing the face masks.

They had opened their mouth to say something but the senior doctor announced, "Don't worry she is alright. And the shocking yet lucky part is, she is out of danger even after derimenting her too much of blood. We are hoping for her to wake up soon" Saying that they shook hands with the two guys and took their leave.

Payton and Raven smiled. They shared a 'I told you she's a warrior' kind of look while falling in the linked chairs together. "Uh, I suggest you go and freshen up. You have been here since the night. I will stay here until she's awake! Even Girard is on his way to the hospital, please go and freshen up!" Seeing Payton look so weary, Raven suggested.

Payton without any argument nodded in yes and left the hospital after meeting the doctors for a discussion.

Thirty minutes later to his leave Raven decided to visit Shania in the ICU ward as she was shifted there from the OT. He silently pushed the door open and his gaze fell on the bed at Shania.

He stood in the door step severally blinking his eyes while his mouth chipped, "Shania!" She was she awake and sitting on the bed quietly.

Her eyes were lava red while tears fell from her eyes in a chain. "You are awake!" Having taken a seat on the stool beside the bed he exclaimed.

Shania upped her eyes at the same time. Her pupils awfully stared his face. She was annoyed by his appearance, it was clearly visible on her face for right after he entered the room, her heart beats increased.

He knew what was going on in her mind and watched her closely. She shows all her emotions through her big dovy eyes and Raven, he can't stop but see Billy in her. He had got his eyes from his mother. He was occupied relating their son with her until he heard Shania spoke. "You don't let me stay in peace. You don't let me die in peace either." he looked at his hands avoiding her gaze.

He could speak against her nevertheless, something stopped Raven, and he only let her speak. "What do you want Raven, I still don't get it? Six years, it has been six years and still don't understand what you want from me." she cried as sobs started to build.

"You ruined my image in the society. You showed that I am a psycho who is dangerous for her children. You accused me of the death of my own daughter and then snatched Billy away from me. Do you really know how Kiara died?" she hit her weak fist on his shoulder. "It was an accident. And that happened because of you. If you hadn't fought with me and left then I wouldn't have followed you by leaving the door of the wash room away. My toddler daughter rushed inside and drowned! That's because of you Raven. Because of you." He was shocked, for all these years he had considered her the reason behind his daughter's death however there was such a secret behind it, he never knew.

It was indeed an accident and so the court left Shania innocent when Raven had filed a murder and custody case for both of his children.

"Your mother accused me of tying her in the chair and behaving a psycho during my pregnancy but did she ever talk you why did I tie her!" She was slowly slowly disclosing all the secrets that she had kept buried within her.

"What do you mean?" Raven asked looking at her stupidly.

"Your mother tried to kill my babies in the womb. She was not ready for our new life, she didn't want you to become a father in an early age, that was why I tied her in the chair and forced you to leave their house. Your father was cool, but he trusted his wife more than me, and he with his wife manipulated you against me... You believed them. You forced me to run away from you and your house so that I could save my kids." She sobbed hysterically.

"You are a heartless freak, Raven Carter. Finally, when I was trying to lead a normal life after winning Billy's case, I tried many times to convince you. I wanted us to give our relationship a chance but you bought your stupid contractually married wife and took my son away from me." she was shouting now.

"I hate you! After destroying my life why did you save me? What do you try to prove Haan? Why!!!" with a high pitched scream Shania pulled the syringe from the back of her palm.

She started throwing her hands and leg in different direction trying to hurt herself. "Shania... Behave Shania..." Raven was scared. He didn't want get hurt any more and shouted on her in order to stop her but Shania turned while.

She became so aggressive that when she tried to turn her body in another angle then she fell on the floor with a thud and her forehead started bleeding again. "Shania!!!" Raven attempted to get a hold of her shoulder but to no avail.

She pushed him hard, nevertheless just when she pushed him back Payton rushed inside the room with three nurses and perplexingly saw the scenario happening in the room. "Hey Shania, calm down! Calm down..." he sat next to Shania pulled her in his arms.

"He's a heartless freak, Payton! I hate him, I just hate him" she cried and passed out in his arms leaving the two guys stare each other in defeat.

Although she was a warrior, she was badly broken.

Tbc...

Chapter 62. New beginning

A week later,

"Thanks" Shania smiled sitting on an armchair as Payton forwarded her a cup of coffee.

She was staring at the starry sky from the ceiling to floor huge window. It was like a clip playing on a screen. The blue sky mixed with black theme looked awesomely beautiful. "How long are you going to stay here?" he asked taking a seat next to her.

Shania stubbornly got discharged that day from the hospital and tried to attempt suicide again however, Payton who had followed her saved her. He slapped her on the cheek and taught her how important and worthy her life was.

But as broken as she was, she still did not want to go to the hospital and face her ex-husband. She was crazy at her father too who had refused to file a case against Raven and Kiara for tricking and taking Billy away from her. To her surprise, her father said no to it and before they can have further conversation, he had to leave for a crucial meeting same night.

She was so pissed off of her life that suicide seemed the only option valid to her, and she began to pursue her only wish— to die.

But not only did Payton save her on the night of the execution of her suicide plan, but he also saved her on the second night and took her too his farm house in the city. "Why? You want to throw me out or what!" Shania shot back at him and as usually caught him in the web of her words.

She was indeed a clever businessperson!

"No, that is not what I wanted to convey. Uh, your father called me in the morning! He is missing you. He doesn't trust me with your life" Payton laughed. "He thinks I am Kiara's agent whose playing another game to hurt you" he said without hiding even a single thing from her.

He was trying to lace some humour along his words and surprisingly, it did not affect her humorously at all. Shania stared her bandaged wrist falling in the traps of her past memories. "Tell him I am dead, I don't want to go back. I don't want to face them all, they are cruel" she announced in a heavy voice.

Payton trailed the cup of his beverage looking at the sky. He could not utter anything after that nor can he insist her to leave his farm house. Unknowingly, her presence has started amusing her. She was slowly becoming a part of his busy and lonely life.

"If you still insist I will leave your house and go somewhere else" she placed her cup on the small circular table of a small length.

She was actually expecting some exclamation from him alas, he did not react at all. Her heart fluttered feeling pathetic and Shania got up. She had come with him without getting anything from her assets. Not even a phone. She awkwardly roamed in the room looking for anything that she could take along and leave at once regardless, she had to go alone just like how she had come here.

"What are you doing?" Payton cranked his neck behind his back focusing on her face.

He saw her standing near the door like a mannequin with no moves. He was confused seeing her act weird and awkward. "What's wrong" Payton inquired again.

"I.. I am.. I am leaving" She said standing stiff.

"Are you crazy? I don't get what you intend to do all the time. Come on, come back here" he said feigning to sound stern.

But Shania was different, she never took anyone's orders. "First you ask me when am I going to go and then when I go, you call me back. Do you think I am useless piece of shit" he widened his eyes in shock since she was crying.

He walked to her awestruck by her mood swings. She was an quizzical creature. "What is your problem, Shania. Why do you take everyone so seriously" he asked holding her firmly in his grip.

However, she quietly stood before him, crying in a low voice. "I hate you too..." he heard her speak between her sobs.

She was incredible. What and when she changed, it was unbelievable and unable to understand. "You are... Too stubborn Avram" he stated decreasing the gap between their faces. "if I wanted to push you away I would have never brought you here in the first place... I am alone, i won't mind you staying here with me forever." She pulled her face up to see his.

"What do you mean?" she spoke slowly with wet eyes.

Rather than answering her verbally Payton rubbed his thumb on her bottom lip before he slowly and gently kissed them. She was not shocked, this was not their first kiss. They had shared many kisses in the college too.

But this one was different. It demanded commitment, love and her support. "They are happy in their lives together, and you and I are alone. May be we both can help each other!" Payton said sliding his arms around her waist.

Shania neither spoke nor moved a bit, she rather let Payton pick her up in his arms and kiss her forehead softly. She didn't mind him taking her to the bed and cover her body with his hard one. "You are a bad baby, you need to change your mindset toward people" he spoke kissing her both eyes. "You need to look at things in a positive way" He kissed her cheeks one by one. "You

need to understand that everyone is not against you." He kissed her jawline with a trail of wet pecks.

"And you need to let people and past go away once they are gone. Here I mean, free Raven and Kiara from your hatred and let Billy live his life with his new family." Payton said. She parted her lips to say something, but he kissed them, he let his lips linger on her until she was calm in his hold. "Billy needs some time, he is a kid and fears you. Once he will grow and try understanding things, he will call you his mother for sure. Let years go by, everything will be alright" he said.

"But..." Shania again attempted to speak yet again he interrupted her.

"Come Shania, we both know it very well... They both were always made for each other. It was US who always created misunderstandings between them. Let's just leave them alone, let's not suffer any more, let's not ruin our lives and let's just start a new

Chapter." He chipped digging his fingers in her hair while his fingers kissed her throat.

"Probably, we were made for each other Shania! But our lust for them never let us realize it" Payton left Shania in deep thoughts as he pulled down the sleeve of her left shoulder and kissed her warm skin.

"Is it too late to accept that realization and want each other?" She asked, Payton looked up from her shoulder with a smile.

"Not at all, we can still make it up to it" he gushed near her ear lobe.

"I want to forget everything Payton, I want to start a fresh new life" Shania confessed circling her arms around her him protectively. "But I am very possessive and scared. I don't want to experience another heart break" She added further.

This only made him smile widely, Payton slid next to her as his fingers clasped around her waist pulling her on his chest cautiously. "Then don't you worry, I will be a good lover. I don't even have anyone to leave you either. We both are same and gone through the same heart break, Shania. I promise tomorrow will be a new start of our lives. I promise." With this he brushed his palm on her eyelids making her close them at the instant and hugged her tightly. Probably, tomorrow's going to be a fresh start.

Tbc...

(Last

Chapter)

Baby boy's birthday

"Mummy, I want tho (to) go to the market" Billy uttered with his slipping tongue.

He was growing up quickly and his talks were becoming way more and more cute and naughty. He was becoming more stubborn too. Kiara smile watching baby boy stand in his half pants in front of her as if he was an obedient son of her mamma. "Sure, I will take you to the market" she pulled his chubby cheeks whilst kissing them lightly too.

Five months passed by in a jiffy, and they were the most amazing five months of their lives while they stayed together in Raven's parents' house. Today was Billy's third birthday too, so the celebration was doubled.

Girard and his grandparents were occupied with the task of decorating the house. They decided to go with the theme of Mowgli and decorate the house with green materials and the stickers and pictures of Mowgli too. That was not only the reason alone, Billy loved watching Mowgli with his uncle and papa.

"Gia, what iss dat (that)?" Having taken assurance from his mother, he was there standing like a Lilliput hugging the stool on which Girard was standing and putting the 'Happy birthday baby Carter' garland made with Mowgli theme put up on the wall right above the balloons of the number three and a cute balloon cake.

Girard chuckled bending and pulling up the bundle of joy who was distracting them from their works since their start. "I am decorating the house, it's your birthday toda!" Girard informed his nephew alas he was busy in something else.

Billy poke his finger on the balloon cake while his uncle's words went from the top of his head, "It's my birthfae (birthday)?" Billy repeated with a small slur making Girard and his grandpa chuckle together. "Gia, this... Thisss..." Billy chattered as the next moment what he does is— pull out the balloon cake and let it float before finding its place on the floor.

"Ehhh, you naughty boy. I am assured that you are born out of my brother's sperm. Junior Raven" Kissing his chubby cheeks and pressing them between his fore finger and thumb uncle Girard whined with him as Billy let out a fake cry over his uncle's weird way of expressing his love.

He slapped him with his baby palms anyway managing to get out of his hold and run to her grandpa this time, for more queries to be clarified lol.

Mr. Carter laughed watching his little heir closely at what he was doing. He was filling confetti in the heart shaped big balloon that was going to blast in the air while Billy cuts his cake. "What is thissss" he pointed at the blown balloon, Mr. Carter locked the lithium gas in the big balloon and present that forward to Billy for a close look.

"NO, don't touch it" Mr. Carter pulled away from sooner when he realized his little heir was going to touch it. He still had the scene of Billy pulling out Girard's decoration from the wall, and so he attempted in saving his blown balloon from his dear and little dear, baby Billy.

xxxx

"Happy birthday to you! Happy birthday dear Billy, happy birthday to you!" Sounds of clap and the melodious singing of the birthday song was everywhere echoing in hall of the Carter villa.

Raven had him held in his arms as Billy cut the Mowgli cake with the assistance of his father and dance along feeling excited. He least had the idea what was happening around but the sight of the big cake on the table across them in the centre had him drooling.

"Like father like son!" Girard exclaimed watching at both the father and son's duo looking so adorable together.

They wore the same clothes. A black denim with a white shirt and the sleeves rolled up. Since Billy's hair were got from his father, he looked like Raven's childhood. All of them laughed when Raven tried to stuff the cut piece of cake in his grandma's mouth as he held Billy's little palm within his big one but Billy flared an annoyed scream and ate the cake with his hand.

The family had not come over of the moment when another shocking moment came in light when they witnessed Billy stretching out his small arm towards his mamma and calling her to eat it. They gasped in awe seeing how he carefully put his eaten piece of cake in her mouth and clapped his hand.

Billy left the elders to laugh on another humorous scene when he wiped his cream stained fingers on Raven's shirt like it was no big deal while a dazed Raven severally flashed his eyes twisting his lips but in the end he joined the family in the laughter too. This is what he had wanted, didn't he?

xxxx

The dinner was done and the mess which was created by master Billy alone was done cleaning by all of them. They slid within the couch with a release of a tired sigh at once. The day had been turingly beautiful contributing to the best memories so far.

Although the year began with hardship but ended as it was assumed it to end— happily with unity.

The Carter watched their little member play with the gift boxes he had received from the guests those were never invited. Raven insisted on keeping this day their memory alone without involving any outsider.

It was more like a good flow of their beginning that has started five months ago. Even though everybody from their relatives to the business partners and clients knew it was the born day of baby Carter, they decided to not call anyone and keep it simply as a personal function.

Despite everything, the clients, the business partners, the employees and the relatives had not forgotten to send gifts. They were so many that the entire dining table and Raven's and Kiara's room along with Billy's nursery room which was created next to their room was filled with gifts. There was big gift from his grand father too. His mother's father, Mr. Avram. However,

they were too tired to open them now. As it was said earlier, the day has been long and turingly awesome!

They all were silently enjoying Billy played with his wrapped gift boxes while Girard shot him on the camera. He had been the cameraman for tonight and had not missed any of the clips that was adorable. "Billy, billy look here!" he called to his nephew who as expectedly did not give him any heed.

The Carters were tired and ready to retire to their rooms already but when the knock from a stranger wearing a uniform, fell on the open doors of their villa, they looked in the direction and heard him say, "There is a courier in the name of Billy Raven Carter" Raven got up appalled looking at the guy who forwarded him a paper to sign while he walked to get the courier.

"Woah? What's that" Mr. Carter joined Raven too as they saw two courier men pulling out big boxes from their courier van and keep on their doorstep.

They took eight rounds and there weren't more than thirteen boxes piling up before the son and father. It was a different feeling for Billy. He stood watching the courier guys coming and going and clapped his hands chiming in his inaudible tone.

Raven was counting the number of boxes as requested by the courier guy, when it was done he was handed over the list of the boxes and what it contained along with a letter. "Who sent these?" Kiara approached them after having spotted the couriered guy hand Raven a letter.

She was amazed to see the name, 'Shania' written on the letter and smiled, this was the massive birthday present from Billy's mother.

Raven opened the envelope carefully without harming the letter and read it out,

'I have given up on Billy's custody doesn't mean I have given up from being his mother too! I can forget your betrayal but not my son's birthday.

This is Billy's birth day present from his MOTHER. Take his care and give him love. Mamma loves him so much.

~Shania'

"Awww I am tired. Raven take the boxes to your room alone, take help from Gerry if want as I am retiring. Good night" he yawned leaving Raven stand there with Kiara and a jumping Billy beside them.

Raven smiled watching the gift boxes while Kiara messaged Payton for thanking Shania and letting her know Billy was jumping with excitement seeing the gifts. She attached a video clip of Billy that she captured in her phone at the instant.

It was not hidden from them that Payton and Shania were together. After the accident her decision of living with Payton remained forever, and they were now dating each other. Payton

and Kiara sometimes talked but the anger coming from Shania seemed to be never ending. However today the hidden message she conveyed via the letter was enough to give her the idea, everything was right at its place... Just like how it was supposed to be.

~~~

"Awww my babyyyy!" Shania squealed.

Thousands of metres away in Serbia Payton hugged Shania from the back as she jumped seeing her son go crazy looking at the gift boxes, "See I told you, with the passing time, he will understand and love you like his mother too." He spoke near her ear lobe and pulled it with his teeth annoying Shania.

This was also possible because Kiara would send Payton Billy's videos and photos every time she had time. She also removed the fear of Shania from Billy's heart and made him call her a mother.

Shania actually changed her perception towards Kiara when she saw in a video she was showing Shania's picture to Billy, and he pointed at it with a smile and squealed, "Mamma" that was the moment when she decided to let Billy live his life with his step mother who was the right person for him.

But she was a changed person now. The togetherness with Payton changed her mentally, her personality as well as her perception towards life totally. And now, she was yet another happy woman like Kiara alas, deprived with the happiness of a kid.

And the very thought made her cry hysterically. Shania caught Payton off guard, the phone from her hand falling on the floor. He panicked seeing her in that state. He was about to pull away and turn her around but Shania did it herself and banged her hands on his chest. "I also want to have a perfect family with a baby. Payton I want a baby" she cried hitting him between her obstinacy. "I am not a bad mother... I also want to be a mother like Kiara" she added taking Kiara's name after a long time.

Payton sighed rolling his eyes. This woman was crazy and her stupid mood swings were crazier!

"For having a kid, we should get married first." he tried to sound serious.

But Shania only cried more pulling him by the shoulders like an irritating teenager cringing to her boyfriend for a stuffed pink teddy, "NO, first give me a baby. Please." she ranted. "Alright impregnate me tonight and marry me tomorrow, how does that sound?" She suggested wiping her tears away.

Thirty seconds passed and Payton did not answer. He twisted his lips with the expressions as if he was in deep thinking, and the very next moment he pulled Shania on his shoulder taking her

towards the bed, "Let's make a beautiful baby and gift a sibling to Billy on his next birthday!" He announced throwing her on the bed.

Seems life was showering its blessings everywhere equally!

THE END.